The English Works of Raja Rammohun Roy

GIFTED BY
RAJA RAMMOHUN ROY LIBRARY FOUNDATION
(Estd. by the Deptt. of Culture
Government of India)
Block DD-34, Sector-1, Salt Lake City,
CALCUTTA - 700064



RAJA RAMMOHUN ROY.

The English Works of Raja Rammohun Roy

SCL, KOLKATA
G3785

Editor
JOGENDRA CHUNDER GHOSE

With an English Translation of
TUHFATUL MUWAHHIDDIN

VOLUME III

COSMO PUBLICATIONS

081
R 888 e.G
V-3

First Published 1906

Published by :
Rani Kapoor (Mrs.)
COSMO PUBLICATIONS
24-B, Ansari Road,
New Delhi-110002

Printed at :
Taj Offset Press
Delhi

CONTENTS.

	PAGE.
Biographical Sketch of the Author	ix
Introduction	xiii
Translation of an abridgment of the Vedanta	1
Do. the Mundakopanishad	19
Do. the Kenopanishad	33
Do. the Kathopanishad	43
Do. the Isopanishad	61
Divine Worship by means of the Gayatri	79
A Defence of Hindu Theism	87
A Second Defence of the Monotheistical System of the Vedas ...	101
An Apology for the Pursuit of Final Beatitude	127
Religious instructions founded on sacred authorities	133
The Brahmunical Magazine	143
Answer of a Hindu, &c.	199
Translation of a Sanskrit Tract on Different Modes of Worship	205
Humble Suggestions, &c.	209
The Trust-deed of the Brahmo Samaj	213
Autobiographical Sketch	223
Introduction, &c.	227
Preliminary Remarks—Brief Sketch of the Ancient and Modern Boundaries and History of India	231
Questions and Answers on the Judicial System of India ...	239
Do. do. on the Revenue System of India ...	271
A paper on the Revenue System of India	287
Additional Queries, respecting the condition of India... ...	295
Appendix	303
Remarks on Settlement in India by Europeans	313

PAGE.

Translation of a Conference between an Advocate for, and an Opponent of, the practice of Burning Widows Alive; from the original Bungla 321

A second Conference between an Advocate for, and an Opponent of, the practice of Burning Widows Alive 333

Abstract of the Arguments regarding the Burning of Widows, considered as a Religious Rite 365

Brief Remarks regarding Modern Encroachments on the Ancient Rights of Females, according to the Hindoo Law of Inheritance 373

Essay on the Rights of Hindoos over Ancestral Property according to the Law of Bengal: Appendix: Hindoo Law of Inheritance 385

Petition against the Press Regulation: (1) to the Supreme Court, and (2) to the King in Council 435

A letter to Lord Amherst on English Education 469

Address to Lord William Bentinck 475

Anti-Suttee Petition to the House of Commons 479

The Precepts of Jesus the Guide to Peace and Happiness ... 481

An Appeal to the Christian Public in Defence of the Precepts of Jesus 545

Second Appeal to the ditto ditto ... 561

Final Appeal to the ditto ditto ... 677

A Letter on the Prospects of Christianity 875

The Common Basis of Hindooism and Christianity 889

A Dialogue between a Missionary and Three Chinese Converts 909

Speeches and Letters 915

Petition to Government against the Resumption of Lakheraj Lands 935

A Present to the Believers in one God 941

Index 959

LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS.

1.	Portrait of Raja Rammohun Roy	*Frontispiece.*
2.	„ „ „ *To face page* ..	223
3.	Death-mask „ „ „ „ ...	481
4.	Tomb „ „ „ „ ...	875

BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCH OF THE AUTHOR.

Raja Rammohun Roy, the founder of the Brahma Samaj or the Theistic Church of India, was born at Radhanagar, Bengal, in May 1772, of an ancient and honourable Brahman family. His father gave him a good education; he learnt Persian at home, Arabic at Patna (where he studied Euclid, Aristotle and the Koran), and Sanskrit at Benares. Although a devout idolater in boyhood, he early began to doubt and speculate, and at fifteen left home to study Buddhism in Tibet, where his criticisms on Lama-worship gave much offence. After some years' travel he returned, but, his anti-idolatrous sentiments obliging him to leave home, he lived at Benares until his father's death in 1803. After this, he spent about ten years in the East India Company's service, latterly as Dewan or head officer in the collection of Revenues. During this period he first began to assemble his friends together for evening discussions on the absurdities of idolatory, and he also issued his first work, Tuhfat-ul-Muwahhiddin ("A gift to Monotheists"). This treatise was in Persian, with an Arabic preface, and was a bold protest against superstition and priestcraft. These proceedings brought on him much hostility, and even persecution, and in 1814 he retired to Calcutta for greater safety. Here he soon established a little Friendly Society (Atmiya Sabha), which met weekly to read the Hindu Scriptures and to chant Monotheistic hymns. In 1816 he translated the Vedanta into Bengali and Hindustani, following this by a series of translations from the Upanishads into Bengali, Hindustani and English, with introductions and comments of his own. These works he published at his own cost and disseminated widely among his countrymen. His writings excited much opposition and gave rise to numerous controversies, in which his ability, tact and learning rendered him fully a match for his antagonists. But the deadliest blow he inflicted upon Hindu superstition was his effective agitation against the rite of Suttee, the burning of living widows on the piles of their deceased husbands

In 1811 he had been a horrified witness of this sacrifice in his elder brother's family, and he had vowed never to rest until he had uprooted this custom. He exposed the hollow pretences of its advocates in elaborate pamphlets both in Bengali and English, and pressed the matter in every possible way, till at last the tide of public feeling turned, and on December 4, 1829, Lord William Bentinck issued a regulation abolishing Suttee throughout all the territories subject to Fort William. Rammohun was an active politician and philanthropist. He built school-houses and established schools in which useful knowledge was gratuitously taught through the medium both of the English and the native languages. He wrote a suggestive Bengali Grammar, of which he published one version in English (1826) and one in Bengali (1833). He wrote valuable pamphlets on Hindu law and made strenuous exertions for the freedom of the native Press; he also established (1822) and mainly conducted two native newspapers, the *Sambad Kaumudi* in Bengali, and the *Mirat-al-Akhbar* in Persian and made them the means of diffusing much useful political information. Becoming interested in Christianity he learned Hebrew and Greek in order to read the Bible in the original languages, and in 1820 he issued a selection from the four Gospels entitled the Precepts of Jesus, the Guide to Peace and happiness. This was attacked by the Baptist Missionaries of Serampur, and a long controversy ensued in which he published three remarkable Appeals to the Christian Public in defence of the "Precepts of Jesus." He also wrote other theological tracts (sometimes under assumed names) in which he attacked both Hindu and Christian orthodoxy with a strong hand. But his personal relations with orthodox Christians were never unfriendly, and he rendered valuable assistance to Dr. Duff in the latter's educational schemes. He also warmly befriended a Unitarian Christian Mission which was started in Calcutta (1824) by Mr. William Adam, formerly a Baptist Missionary, who, in attempting to convert Rammohun to trinitarianism was himself converted to the opposite view. This Unitarian Mission, though not a theological success, attracted considerable sympathy among the Hindu Monotheists, whose Atmiya Sabha had then become extinct. At last Rammohun felt able to re-embody his cherished ideal, and on August 20, 1828, he opened the first Brahma Association (Brahma Sabha) at a hired house.

A suitable church-building was then erected and placed in the hands of trustees, with a small endowment and a remarkable trust-deed by which the building was set apart "for the worship and adoration of the Eternal, Unsearchable and Immutable Being, who is the Author and Preserver of the universe." The new church was formally opened on the 11th Magh (January 23), 1830, from which day the Brahma Samaj dates its existence. Having now succeeded in his chief projects, Rammohun resolved to visit England, and the King of Delhi appointed him envoy thither on special business, and gave him the title of Raja. He arrived in England on April 8, 1831, and was received with universal cordiality and respect. He watched with special anxiety the parliamentary discussions on the renewal of the East India Company's charter and gave much valuable evidence before the Board of Control on the condition of India. This he republished with additional suggestions ("Exposition of the Practical Operation of the Judicial and Revenue Systems of India") and also reissued his important "Essay on the Right of Hindus over Ancestral Property." He visited France, and wished to visit America, but died unexpectedly of brain-fever at Bristol, September 27, 1833.—*The Encyclopædia Britannica.*

INTRODUCTION.

All earnest attempts at reform, whether religious, social, political, or of any other description, are based on faith in the ultimate triumph of truth and justice and humanity, which is synonymous with a belief in the moral government of the Universe. This is an essential element in religious belief. One would, therefore, expect to find Raja Rammohun Roy, the first all-round reformer in modern India, "above all and beneath all a religious personality. The many and far-reaching ramifications of his prolific energy were forth-puttings of one purpose. The root of his life was religion. He would never have been able to go so far or to move his countrymen so mightily as he did but for the driving power of an intense theistic passion." As in his life so in his writings, religion occupies the foremost place. His writings on religious subjects are the most important and most voluminous. But their very extent and variety are apt to puzzle those who may strive to find out the exact nature of his religious faith. The late Babu Rajnarain Bose had it from his father, a disciple of the Raja, that the latter before his departure to England had foretold that after his death various sects would claim him as belonging to their own particular ranks, but he declared that he did not belong to any particular sect. What the Raja foresaw has actually taken place. "It has been said that Rammohun Roy delighted to pass for a believer in the Vedanta with the Hindus, for a Christian among the adherents of that creed, and for a disciple of the Koran with the champions of Islamism.* The truth is that his eclecticism equalled his sincerity." † It would be out of place here to enter into a discussion of the question of his religious belief. ‡ Suffice it to say that he believed in pure theism, as his *Tuhfat-ul-Muwahhiddin* on the one hand and the Trust-Deed of the Brahmo Samaj on the other, in addition to

* His habit, in his religious controversies with various sects, of taking his stand not merely upon pure reason but mainly upon their scriptures led some people to think that he was all things to all men. This, of course, is a mistake. His controversial method was meant to convince the followers of different faiths that even their scriptures, which they professed implicitly to follow, enjoined the worship of the one true God.

† *The Contemporary Evolution of Religious Thought*, by Count Goblet d'Alviella, p. 233.

‡ For an exhaustive discussion of the subject see the Raja's biography in Bengali, by Babu Nagendranath Chatterji, which ought to be translated into English.

many of his other works, prove conclusively. He did not reject any truth to be found in any scriptures or in the teachings of any prophet or saint; he revered and accepted truth from all quarters, but at the same time he did not accept any book or teacher as infallible. It should not, however, be forgotten that though he was thus cosmopolitan in his acceptance of truth, there are reasons to think that he believed in what may be called national or racial manifestations or developments of universal theism. His partiality (in no narrow sense) for the ethical portion of Christ's teachings is evident. But it would be wrong to suppose for that reason that he was exclusively or even principally a follower of Jesus. In making this statement we do not solely or chiefly rely on his prose writings in Sanskrit, Arabic, Persian, English or Bengali. His hymns in Bengali, too, in our opinion, afford a correct idea of the faith that lay enshrined in the deepest recesses of his heart. For, poetry springs from a deeper source in the soul than anything that is merely didactic, controversial, doctrinal or philosophical. And from the Raja's Bengali devotional poetry, one cannot but take him to have been a Hindu Theist or a theistic Vedantist.

It is sometimes asked whether Rammohun Roy intended that the society for the worship of one God that he founded should have a social counterpart in a religious community separate from all existing ones, such as the Brahmo Samaj has now become. The question is difficult to answer. But from the little study and thought that we have been able to devote to the subject, it seems to us that at the time when he established the Brahmo Samaj, he meant it to be simply a meeting-ground for people of all sects who wished to unite for divine worship, "a place of public meeting of all sorts and descriptions of people without distinction as shall behave and conduct themselves in an orderly, sober, religious and devout manner for the worship and adoration of the Eternal, Unsearchable and Immutable Being who is the author and preserver of the Universe but not under or by any other name, designation or title peculiarly used for and applied to any particular Being or Beings by any man or set of men whatsoever.' Art and philosophy, though each is essentially one all the world over, have yet found various though fitting garb among different peoples according to racial, climatic and other causes. It seems to us, that similarly, the Raja may have thought that Theism, though at bottom one all over the world, has yet found various expression among different races; and though abstract truth is thinkable, yet as it finds actual manifestation in some concrete shape, it is the part of wisdom to allow the abstract universal theism in all countries and among all races to keep its native shape and colour, in which it is embodied, freed, of course, from all that is base and impure, with

a broad spirit of toleration for other shapes and colours: or in other words, he may have believed that Theism is one, and Hindu Theism, Semitic Theism, &c., are different forms of the same universal faith; and that the future unity of the human race in religion is not to be realised by all mankind following the creed of this or that sect, but by each nation or race giving up all such erroneous and superstitious beliefs and pernicious customs and lifeless rituals as clash with pure Theism, but in every thing else keeping all that is racy of the soil, all that distinctively belongs to the religious genius of that nation or race, in a spirit of discriminating reverence for its own past and of respect and toleration for others.

Professor Monier Williams speaks of him as the first really earnest investigator in the science of comparative theology, which the world has produced.

Social customs and practices have been and are in all countries more or less connected with the religious beliefs of the people. It is, therefore, only natural that Rammohun Roy's programme of religious reform should lead on to and embrace social reform. In all countries, and specially in India, social reform consists chiefly in doing away with the disabilities or sufferings incident to difference of sex or the accident of birth. Or, in other words, social reformers have chiefly to fight with the spirit of caste and its evils and the subjection of women to the selfish interests and pleasures or supposed interests of the male sex. Rammohun Roy's chief claim to the gratitude of Hindu womanhood is the courageous and devoted part that he played in the movement for the abolition of *suttee*. He may or may not have been the central figure in that movement, but it must be admitted by all that but for his exertions that inhuman custom would not have been put down by law so soon as it was.

But to prevent the murder of widows was only to create another problem, namely, the amelioration of their condition. It is even now a question as to how we can best better their lot. Many solutions of the problem have been proposed and attempted; their re-marriage, giving them such training as to enable them to lead honourable, useful and independent lives, so changing the Hindu law of inheritance as to make the means of living of Hindu widows less precarious, &c. His "Brief remarks regarding modern encroachments on the ancient rights of females, according to the Hindu Law of inheritance," was intended to attain the last object. That the condition of helpless widows deeply touched his heart appears also from No. VI. of the *Sambad Kaumudi*, which contained "an appeal to the rich Hindus of Calcutta to constitute a society for the relief of destitute widows, upon the principles of the Civil and Military Widows' Fund, established by order of Government." That he was earnestly in favour of

the education of women is quite clear from many passages in his writings, such, for instance, as the following :—

"As to their inferiority in point of understanding, when did you ever afford them a fair opportunity of exhibiting their natural capacity? How then can you accuse them of want of understanding? If, after instruction in knowledge and wisdom, a person cannot comprehend or retain what has been taught him, we may consider him as deficient; but as you keep women generally void of education and acquirements, you cannot, therefore, in justice pronounce on their inferiority. On the contrary, Lilavati, Bhanumati, the wife of the prince of Karnat, and that of Kalidas, are celebrated for their thorough knowledge of all the Sastras; moreover, in the Vrihadaranyak Opanishad of the Yajur Veda it is clearly stated, that Yajnavalkya imparted divine knowledge of the most difficult nature to his wife Maitreyi, who was able to follow and completely attain it!"

It is true that even with his unbounded enthusiasm in woman's cause and his indefatigable energy he could not take any steps for educating girls, widowed or unmarried; but it may be safely said that had he lived to return home from England and work here for a few years more, his contact with the comparatively enlightened womanhood of the West would certainly have borne fruit in the establishment of educational institutions for Indian girls and women. That Miss Mary Carpenter came out to India to labour for the good of Indian women is due mainly to her contact with the Raja. Regarding the re-marriage of child-widows, it is believed by some that he published a book advocating its introduction but no such production has been discovered among his works. His biographer, Babu Nagendranath Chatterji, says: "We have heard that Rammohun Roy used to express a desire to his friends that the re-marriage of child-widows should become prevalent. When he went to England, a rumour spread everywhere that on coming back home he would introduce the custom of the re-marriage of widows."

It will appear from a study of his "Brief remarks regarding the ancient rights of females" that he was opposed to polygamy, kulinism and the practical selling of girls in marriage. He showed from the Shastras that second marriages were authorised only under certain circumstances, and observed:

"Had a Magistrate or other public officer been authorized by the rulers of the empire to receive applications for his sanction to a second marriage during the life of a first wife, and to grant his consent only on such occasions as the foregoing being substantiated, the above Law might have been carried into effect, and the distress of the female sex in Bengal, and the number of suicides would have been necessarily very much reduced."

We have no indication in his works of his views on child-marriage. Perhaps in his days in Bengal, though such marriages must have been customary, their consummation was postponed to a maturer age, thus minimizing the evil to some extent, as is still the case in some provinces of India. But with regard to this item, too, of the social reform programme [illegible] as to what he would have

done had he lived to come back from England. For, a man, who had such innate chivalry in his nature that he would never take his seat if any woman of what rank so ever remained standing in his presence, could not have failed to observe the evil effects on women of such a custom, at any rate after coming in contact with the comparatively free and healthy womanhood of the West.

That Rammohun Roy had not failed to observe the evil effects of caste will appear from the extract from one of his letters printed on page 929 of this edition. No. VIII of his *Sambad Kaumudi*, too, prints the plea of a philanthropist [probably himself], who observing the misery caused by prejudices of caste, urges the Hindus not to debar themselves thereby from mechanical pursuits, but to cultivate "such arts as would tend to their comfort, happiness and independence." By crossing the ocean and in other ways, the Raja, to a great extent, broke through the unreasonable and injurious restrictions imposed by caste Why he did not or could not do so entirely, is not known to a certainty. But from his conduct in other matters, we should hesitate to ascribe to him any motives of cowardice or self-interest. He published with a Bengali translation the first chapter of a Sanskrit work against caste, named *Bajrasuchi*, by Mrityunjayacharya.

In most things Raja Rammohun Roy was in advance of his age, and rose above the influence of his surroundings. He was the pioneer in many reform movements. But in the matter of total abstinence from intoxicating drinks, his views and practice differed from those of most reformers of the present day. He was a moderate drinker and even quoted some Shastras in favour of the practice There is also another matter in which he was not in advance of his age. In his "Brief remarks regarding the ancient rights of females," he says that of the three modes of conduct left to the widows of a polygamous man to pursue, the second is "to walk in the paths of unrighteousness for their maintenance and independence." And this he, of course, condemns, and thereby shows himself to be, as we otherwise also know him to have been, an advocate of social purity. Yet it would appear that he found nothing objectionable in entertaining his guests with the nautch and music of dancing girls in his residence. For we find in Fanny Parkes' "Wanderings of a Pilgrim," Vol. I, Chap. IV (Residence in Calcutta, May 1823), the following passage :—

"The other evening we went to a party given by Rammohun Roy, a rich Bengali baboo : the grounds, which are extensive, were well illuminated, and excellent fire-works displayed. In various rooms of the house nach girls were dancing and singing."

It is well known that Rammohun Roy himself founded and helped others in founding schools. He took a prominent part in the great educational controversy between the "Orientalists" and the "Anglicists"

and sided with the latter. But for his opposition the clamour of the former for the exclusive pursuit of Oriental studies would most probably have prevailed. His *Letter on English Education* to Lord Amherst is a remarkably convincing production.*

"It was owing, perhaps, to this agitation," remarks Babu Jogendra Chunder Ghose on this letter, "that the foundation-stone of the building intended for the Sanskrit College was laid in the name of the Hindu College (February, 1824), and the Hindu College was, located there together with the Sanskrit College." For the direct and indirect beneficial results of Western education we are indebted to Raja Rammohun Roy as much as to Lord Macaulay, Lord William Bentinck, David Hare, &c.

Rammohun Roy wrote text-books in Bengali on Grammar, Geography, Astronomy and Geometry. He is the father of modern Bengali

* One passage in this letter possesses a special interest of its own. It runs thus:—

"Neither can much improvement arise from such speculations as the following which are the themes suggested by the Vedanta, in what manner is the soul absorbed in the Deity? What relations does it bear to the Divine Essence? Nor will youths be fitted to be better members of society by the Vedantic doctrines which teach them to believe, that all visible things have no real existence, that as father, brother, &c., have no actual entity, they consequently deserve no real affection, and therefore the sooner we escape from them and leave the world the better."

The missionaries advanced in the *Samachar Darpan*, the last objection, which Rammohun assailed in his *Brahmanical Magazine*. He further established a Vedanta College. This seeming inconsistency is explained by Miss Collett as follows: "The teachings of the Vedanta lend themselves to a remarkable diversity of theological interpretation. They are appealed to equally by dualistic and non-dualistic schools of thought. They contain passages which breathe a lofty and ethical Theism; in other places they seem to countenance a Pantheism that is simply Acosmism—the denial of all finite existence; . . . According as the Vedanta is taught with or without a proper selective adjustment of its widely various contents, its value as a subject of instruction may be set high or low. In the ordinary Hindu schools it was taught in false perspective, with a discrimination exercised if at all in favour of what was trivial, incorrect, polytheistic. Rammohun therefore opposed with all his might the suggestion that the British Government should perpetuate or encourage this kind of Vedantic instruction. At the same time he saw in the Vedanta rightly handled and "rightly divided" a means for leading his countrymen out of their prevailing superstition and idolatry into a pure and elevated Theism. Their devotion to the Vedantic scriptures was the lever by which Rammohun hoped to lift them into a simpler and nobler faith. Therefore he founded the Vedanta College; and therefore also he controverted the missionaries' wholesale disparagement of the Vedanta. If the missionaries had succeeded in discrediting the Vedanta, they would in Rammohun's eyes have broken down the bridge which enabled men to pass from Hindu Polytheism to Hindu Theism. He thus combated both the conservative Christian who advocated indiscriminate rejection and the conservative Hindu who advocated the indiscrimate retention of Vedantic teaching; and he provided for a discriminating instruction in the ancient system which should have the approval of liberal Hindus and liberal Christians."

literary prose. He taught his people the use of marks of punctuation. There was in his nature a deep vein of genuine poetry, too; as his Bengali hymns show. He was the first to write theistic hymns in Bengali. Pandit Ramagati Nyayaratna, a well-known Hindu historian of the Bengali language and literature, truly observes that "they appear to possess the power of melting even stony hearts, of making the most irreligious devoted to God and of making hearts sunk in wordliness detached from the world." They are prized by theists and idolaters alike. A few of them are in Sanskrit. We believe an English translation of Rammohun's hymns by Babu Mohinimohan Chatterjee, M. A., has been published by the Adi Brahmo Samaj of Calcutta.

His Bengali journal, the *Sambad Kaumudi*, first appeared in 1821. He is the founder of native journalism in India. The *Sambad Kaumudi* was not exclusively or chiefly a political publication. It, as well as his Persian newspaper, *Mirat-ul-Akhbar* or *Mirror of Intelligence*, had an educational purpose, too. Besides politics, subjects of a historical, literary and scientific character were treated of therein.

Lawyers of eminence have declared that the legal writings of the Raja, such as his "Brief Remarks on Ancient Female Rights," "The Rights of Hindus over Ancestral Property according to the Law of Bengal," would do credit to jurists of the highest standing.

To the public Rammohun Roy is best known as a religious and social reformer. To many he is also known as a literateur and educationist. But he is not so well known as a political reformer and agitator. A brief account of his politics may not therefore be out of place here.

Mr. William Adam, a Baptist Missionary, whose association with Raja Rammohun Roy led him to adopt Unitarian opinions, bears the following testimony to his love of liberty:

"He would be free or not be at all ... Love of freedom was perhaps the strongest passion of his soul,—freedom not of action merely, but of thought ... This tenacity of personal independence, this sensitive jealousy of the slightest approach to an encroachment on his mental freedom was accompanied with a very nice perception of the equal rights of others, even of those who differed most widely from him."

It was this love of liberty that was the source of all his political opinions and the mainspring of all his political activity. It made him take interest in and deeply sympathise with all political movements all over the world that had for their object the advancement of popular freedom. Some instances may here be given of Rammohun's cosmopolitan sympathies in the region of politics.

"When the intelligence reached India that the people of Naples after extorting a constitution from their despotic king were crushed back into servitude by the Austrian troops, in obedience to the joint mandate of the crowned heads of Russia, Prussia, Austria, Sardinia, and Naples, Rammohun felt it keenly."

In a letter to Mr. Buckingham, dated August 11, 1821, he wrote: –

"I am afraid I must be under the necessity of denying myself the pleasure of your society this evening; more especially as my mind is depressed by the late news from Europe.....From the late unhappy news I am obliged to conclude that I shall not live to see liberty universally restored to the nations of Europe, and Asiatic nations, especially those that are European colonies, possessed of a greater degree of the same blessing than what they now enjoy.

"Under these circumstances I consider the cause of the Neapolitans as my own, and their enemies as ours. Enemies to liberty and friends of despotism have never been, and never will be, ultimately successful."

"These noble words," says Miss Collett, "reveal how profoundly Rammohun felt with the late Russel Lowell that "In the gain or loss of one race all the rest have equal claim"; and that

"Wherever wrong is done
To the humblest and the weakest, 'neath the all-beholding Sun,
That wrong is also done to us."

Rammohun's Persian weekly *Mirat-ul-Akhbar* contained an article on "Ireland, the causes of its distress and discontent". In this he dwelt on the evils of absenteeism and the injustice of maintaining Protestant clergymen out of revenues wrung from the Roman Catholic inhabitants of Ireland. He said :—

How admirable is the observation of Saadi (on whom be mercy!)

"Do not say that these rapacious ministers are the well-wishers of his Majesty;
For in proportion as they augment the revenue of the State, they diminish his popularity;
O statesman, apply the revenue of the king towards the comfort of the people; then during their lives they will be loyal to him."

When the news of the establishment of constitutional Government in Spain reached India, he gave a public dinner at the Town Hall. Some months before his departure for England, news reached Calcutta of the latest French Revolution, and, "so great was his enthusiasm that," we are told, "he could think and talk of nothing else!" He viewed it as a triumph of liberty and rejoiced accordingly. On his voyage to England he landed at the Cape for only an hour or two. "Returning on board he met with a nasty accident. The gangway ladder had not been properly secured, and he got a serious fall, from which he was lame for eighteen months afterwards and indeed never finally recovered. But no bodily suffering could repress his mental ardour. Two French frigates, under the revolutionary flag, the glorious tri-colour, were lying in Table Bay; and lame as he was, he would insist on visiting them. The sight of these colours seemed to kindle his enthusiasm, and to render him insensible to pain." During the days of the Reform Bill agitation in England, he

considered the struggle between the reformers and anti-reformers as a struggle between liberty and oppression throughout the world: between justice and injustice, and between right and wrong. He publicly avowed that in the event of the Reform Bill being defeated, he would renounce his connection with England. His Persian weekly, the *Mirat*, did not, however, favourably consider the national aspirations of Greece. Muhammadan sympathy with the Turks may have been to some extent responsible for this attitude to Greece

We now pass on to the Raja's Indian polical opinions. Our politics are sure to be tinged by our attitude towards British rule in India. It is therefore necessary to know what the Raja thought of British rule in India in his day. In his autobiography he writes:

".....I proceeded on my travels, and passed through different countries, chiefly within, but some beyond, the bounds of Hindoostan, with a feeling of great aversion to the establishment of the British Power in India. When I had reached the age of twenty, my father recalled me, and restored me to his favour; after which I first saw and began to associate with Europeans, and soon after made myself tolerably acquainted with their laws and form of government. Finding them generally more intelligent, more steady and moderate in their conduct, I gave up my prejudice against them, and became inclined in their favour, feeling persuaded that their rule, though a foreign yoke, would lead more speedily and surely to the amelioration of the native inhabitants;....."

He concluded his "Final Appeal to the Christian Public"

"by offering up thanks to the supreme Disposer of the events of this universe, for having unexpectedly delivered this country from the long-continued tyranny of its former Rulers, and placed it under the government of the English,—a nation who not only are blessed with the enjoyment of civil and political liberty, but also interest themselves in promoting liberty and social happiness, as well as free inquiry into literary and religious subjects, among those nations to which their influence extends."

But Rammohun gave to Muhammadan rule also its due meed of praise by mentioning in what respects it was superior to British rule. He wrote in his "Appeal to the King in Council" against the Press Regulation:—

"Your Majesty is aware, that under their former Mohammadan Rulers, the natives of this country enjoyed every political privilege in common with Mussulmans, being eligible to the highest offices in the State, entrusted with the command of armies and the government of provinces and often chosen as advisers to their Prince, without disqualification or degrading distinction on account of their religion or the place of their birth. They used to receive free grants of land exempted from any payments of revenue, and besides the highest salaries allowed under the Government, they enjoyed free of charge large tracts of country attached to certain offices of trust and dignity, while natives of learning and talent were rewarded with numerous situations of honour and emolument. Although under the British Rule, the natives of India, have entirely lost this political consequence.....", &c.

Some of the contents of the earlier numbers of the *Sambad Kaumudi* may be given here :-

No. I.—An appeal to the Government for the establishment of a school for the gratuitous instruction of the poor but respectable Hindus.

No. II. Humble address to the Government soliciting the extension of trial by jury to Mofussil, Zilla and Provincial Courts of Judicature.

No. III. An appeal to the Government to relieve the Hindu community from the inconvenience consequent upon there being only one Ghaut for the burning of dead bodies whereas an immense space of ground has been granted for the burial of Christians.

Appeal to Government for the prevention of the exportation of the greatest part of the produce of rice from Bengal to foreign ports.

Appeal to Government to enable the middle class of native subjects to avail themselves of the treatment of European physicians.

Appeal to the Calcutta Magistrates to resort to rigorous measures for relieving the Hindu inhabitants of Calcutta from the serious grievance of Christian gentlemen driving their buggies amongst them and cutting and lashing them with whips, without distinction of sex or age, while they quietly assembled in immense numbers to see the images of their deities pass in the Chitpore Road, when many of them through terror and consternation caused by the lashing inflicted on the spectators fell down into drains, while others were trampled under foot by the crowd.

Raja Rammohun Roy believed that a free Press is one of the best safeguards of liberty. This conviction found expression in his petitions against the Press Regulation (1) to the Supreme Court, and (2) to the King in Council. The Press ordinance prescribed that thenceforth no one should publish a newspaper or other periodical without having obtained a license from the Governor-General in Council, signed by the Chief Secretary. The memorial submitted to the Supreme Court "may be regarded as the Areopagitica of Indian History. Alike in diction and in argument, it forms a noble landmark in the progress of English culture in the East."

This Memorial proving fruitless, Rammohun and his co-adjutors appealed to the King in council. Says Miss Collett :

The appeal is one of the noblest pieces of English to which Rammohun put his name. Its stately periods and not less stately thought recall the eloquence of the great orators of a century ago. In a language and style for ever associated with the glorious vindication of liberty, it invokes against the arbitrary exercise of British power the principles and traditions which are distinctive of British History."

This Memorial, too, proved unavailing. The Privy Council declined to comply with the petition.

A new Jury Act came into operation in the beginning of 1827. On August 18th, 1828, Rommohun wrote to Mr. J. Crawford and entrusted to him petitions against the Act for presentation to both Houses of

Parliament, signed by Hindus and Mohammedans. He thus concisely stated the grounds of grievance :—

"In his famous Jury Bill, Mr. Wynn, the late President of the Board of Control, has by introducing religious distinctions into the judicial system of this country, not only afforded just grounds for dissatisfaction among the Natives in general, but has excited much alarm in the breast of every one conversant with political principles. Any Natives, either Hindu or Mohamedan, are rendered by this Bill subject to judicial trial by Christians, either European or Native, while Christians, including Native converts, are exempted from the degradation of being tried either by a Hindu or Mussulman juror, however high he may stand in the estimation of society. This Bill also denies both to Hindus and Mohamedans the honor of a seat in the Grand Jury even in the trial of fellow Hindus or Mussulmans. This is the sum total of Mr. Wynn's late Jury Bill, of which we bitterly complain."

Rammohun went on to suggest a possibility "which is by no means so remote now as when he wrote":

"Supposing that 100 years hence the Native character becomes elevated from constant intercourse with Europeans and the acquirement of general and political knowledge as well as of modern arts and sciences, is it possible that they will not have the spirit as well as the inclination to resist effectually any unjust and oppressive measures serving to degrade them in the scale of society? It should not be lost sight of that the position of India is very different from that of Ireland, to any quarter of which an English fleet may suddenly convey a body of troops that may force its way in the requisite direction and succeed in suppressing every effort of a refractory spirit. Were India to share one-fourth of the knowledge and energy of that country, she would prove from her remote situation, her riches and her vast population, either useful and profitable as a willing province, an ally of the British empire, or troublesome and annoying as a determined enemy.

"In common with those who seem partial to the British rule from the expectation of future benefits arising out of the connection, I necessarily feel extremely grieved in often witnessing Acts and Regulations passed by Government without consulting or seeming to understand the feelings of its Indian subjects and without considering that this people have had for more than half a century the advantage of being ruled by and associated with an enlightened nation, advocates of liberty and promoters of knowledge."

The letter quoted above is remarkable for the far-sighted glance into the future which it reveals. Here in germ is to be found the national aspiration which is now breaking forth into demands for a greater measure of self-government than the people at present enjoy. Rammohun's English biographer observes that

"The prospect of an educated India, of an India approximating to European standards of culture, seems to have never been long absent from Rammohun's mind; and he did, however vaguely, claim in advance for his countrymen the political rights which progress in civilization inevitably involves. Here again Rammohun stands forth as the tribune and prophet of New India."

The Select Committee of the House of Commons which was appointed in February, 1831, and reappointed in June to consider the renewal of the Company's Charter invited him to appear before it.

Rammohun declined this request but tendered his evidence in the form of successive "Communications to the Board of Control." The first of these dealt with Revenue. The Raja appears here as the champion of the rack-rented ryot. While the Zemindars or land-holders had been greatly benefited by the Permanent Settlement of 1793, while their wealth and the wealth of the community had generally increased, the poor cultivator was no better off. The remedy he asked for was in the first place the prohibition of any further rise in rent, and secondly--rents being now so exorbitantly high as to leave the ryot in a state of extreme misery,--a reduction in the revenue demanded from the Zemindar so as to ensure a reduction in the ryot's rent. The decrease in revenue he would meet by increasing taxes upon luxuries or by employing as Collectors low-salaried Indians instead of high-salaried Europeans. It may here be incidentally observed that nearly three-quarters of a century ago, when education was in a backward condition, Raja Rammohun Roy considered Indians fit for the duties of Collectors. He also considered them well qualified to discharge all judicial duties.

He approved of the settlement in India of a few model landlords from England, but was careful to stipulate that they should not be drawn from the lower classes. This is not the place to criticize the Raja's views on this subject; but it seems open to grave doubt whether a European landed aristocracy for India would have been on the whole beneficial to the people of this country. He concluded with an earnest appeal "to any and every authority to devise some mode of alleviating the present miseries of the agricultural peasantry of India."

It admits of no doubt that the condition of the proprietors of land has improved under the system of permanent assessment. But the Government seems at present to believe that that system has resulted in loss of revenue to the State. It is, therefore, important to quote the Raja's opinion on this subject.

"The amount of assessment fixed on the lands of these provinces at the time of the Permanent Settlement (1793), was as high as had ever been assessed, and in many instances higher than had ever before been realized by the exertions of any government, Mohamedan or British. Therefore the Government sacrificed nothing in concluding that settlement. If it had not been formed, the landholders (*Zemindars*) would always have taken care to prevent the revenue from increasing by not bringing the waste lands into cultivation, and by collusive arrangements to elude further demands; while the state of the cultivators would not have been at all better than it is now. However, if the Government had taken the whole estates of the country into its own hands, as in the ceded and conquered provinces and the Madras Presidency, then, by allowing the landholders only ten per cent. on the rents (*Malikanah*), and securing all the rest to the Government, it might no doubt have increased the revenue for a short time. But the whole of the landlords in the country would then have been reduced to the same wretched condition

as they are at present in in the ceded and conquered Provinces of the Bengal Presidency or rather annihilated, as in many parts of the Madras territory ; and the whole population reduced to the same level of poverty. At the same time, the temporary increase of revenue to Government under its own immediate management would also have soon fallen off, through the misconduct and negligence of the revenue officers, as shown by innumerable instances in which the estates were kept *khas*, *i.e.*, under the immediate management of Government."

"Besides, Government appropriates to itself an enormous duty on the transit and exportation of the produce of the soil, which has, since the period of the Perpetual Settlement, increased to a great amount from the exertions of the proprietors in extending and improving cultivation, under the assurance that no demand of an increase of revenue would be made upon them on account of the progressive productiveness of their estates."

The Raja contrasts the effects of the permanent and periodical systems of assessment in two statements.

"By a comparative view of the revenues of Bengal, Behar and Orissa, from the period of the Perpetual Settlement, it appears that, in the thirty-five years, from 1792-93 to 1827-28, there was a total increase on the whole amount of the Revenue of above 100 per cent. (101·71), and that this increase has been steady and progressive up to the present time ;....."

By a comparative view of the revenue of the old British territory in Madras, it appears that during the same period of thirty-five years (*i. e* from 1793 to 1828) there was an increase of only about 40 per cent., (40·15) on the total amount of the whole revenue. That the increase during the first 17 years was 43 $\frac{33}{100}$ per cent. ; that in the next 8 years the increase was only about 3$\frac{1}{2}$ per cent ; and that in the last 18 years there has been a *decrease* of 2·15 per cent."

In an appendix he urged the Imperial utility of the policy of fixing a maximum rent to be paid by each cultivator, "that their rents already raised to a ruinous extent, might not be subject to further increase." His advocacy of this policy is so statesmanlike that no apology is needed for quoting his views on the subject. To recognise the indefeasible rights of the ryots in the soil would make them loyal to the power that secured them and

" ready to rise in defence of it, as a militia or in any other shape that might be required ; so as to secure the British rule in a foreign and remote empire, alike from internal intrigue and from external aggression, without the necessity of keeping on foot an immense standing army at an enormous cost. This consideration is of great importance in respect to the natives of the upper and western provinces, who are distinguished by their superior bravery, and form the greater part of the British Indian army. If this race of men, who are by no means deficient in feelings of personal honor and regard for family respectability, were assured that their rights in the soil were indefeasible so long as the British power should endure, they would from gratitude and self-interest at all time be ready to devote their lives and property in its defence.

"The saving that might be effected by this liberal and generous policy, through the substituting of a militia force for a great part of the present standing army, would be much greater than any gain that could be realized by any system of increasing land

revenue that human ingenuity could devise. How applicable to this case is the following line of the Persian sage (Saadi) :—

Ba rayat sulh kun Wa'z jang i khasm ai man nishin
Z'anki shahinshah i adil ra rayat lashkar ast.

"Be on friendly terms with thy subjects, and rest easy about the warfare of thine enemies; for to an upright prince his people is an army."

While on the subject of Land Settlement we may say that in 1828, by Regulation III of that year, the revenue collector in each district was authorised to dispossess the holders of tax-free lands by his own authority, without reference to any judicial courts, if the collector should be of opinion, after such enquiry as might satify himself that the title of the proprietor was not valid. It was therein enacted that "such decision of the Collector shall have the force and effect of a decree"; also, that "it shall not be necessary for him to transmit his proceedings to the Board of Revenue," but "the party dispossessed might appeal," and by art. 3., whether an appeal be filed or not, "that it shall and may be lawful for the Collector immediately to carry into effect his decision by attaching and assessing the lands." This regulation produced great alarm and distrust amongst the natives of Bengal, Behar and Orissa, many of whom petitioned against the principle of one party, who lays claim to the land, dispossessing an actual possessor at his own discretion. This agitation was led, though unsuccessfully, by Rammohun Roy. Reg. III of 1828 is still in force.

Among the principal measures advocated in the Raja's *Questions and Answers on the Judicial System of India* were the substitution of English for Persian as the official language of the courts of law; the appointment of native assessors in the civil courts; trial by jury, of which the Panchayet system was the indigenous parallel; separation of the offices of judge and revenue commissioners; separation of the offices of judge and magistrate; codification of the criminal law and also of the law of India; and consultation with the local magnates before enacting laws. The last reform proposed contains the germs of representative legislative bodies.

Students of Indian economics are familiar with the fact that every year nearly 45 crores of rupees of India's capital is drained off to foreign parts without any hope of return. This drain of wealth did not escape the eyes of Raja Rammohun Roy. In his "Revenue System of India" he says that as a large sum of money is now annually drawn from India by Europeans retiring from it with the fortunes realized there, a system which would encourage Europeans of capital to become permanent settlers with their families, would necessarily greatly improve the resources of the country. He pre-

pared several tables to prove this drain. The following two paragraphs are appended to these tables :—

"By the evidence of Messrs. Lloyd and Melville (the former the Accountant-General, and the latter the Auditor-General of the East India Company), recorded in the Minutes of evidence taken before the Select Committee of the House of Lords, 23rd February, 1830, it appears that the proportion of the Indian revenues *expended in England* on the territorial account amounts, on an average, to £3,000,000 annually. It includes the expenses at the Board of Control and India House, pay, absentee allowances and pensions to Civil and Military officers in Europe for services in India, with interest of money realized there, &c., &c., besides £453,588 for territorial stores consigned to India.

"In a letter of the Court of Directors to the Government of Bengal, dated the 20th of June, 1810, and quoted in the work "On Colonial Policy as applicable to the Government of India," by a very able servant of the company, holding a responsible situation in Bengal, the Directors state that "it is no extravagant assertion to advance, that the annual remittances to London on account of individuals, have been at the rate of nearly £2,000,000 per annum *for a series of years past*." (p. 70.) From these and other authentic documents the author calculates the amount of capital, or "the aggregate o tribute, public and private, so withdrawn from India from 1765 to 1820, at £100,000,000."† (p. 65.)

It has already been incidentally shown that Raja Rammohun Roy was in favour of the settlement in India of European capitalists under certain conditions. Among the advantages likely in his opinion to arise from such settlement was the improvement of the condition of the native inhabitants by European landlords showing them superior methods of cultivation. That this was not altogether a vain expectation appears from some observations in Mr. N. G. Mukerji's *Hand-book of Indian Agriculture*. Says Mr. Mukerji :

> indeed, Indian agriculture has been actually vastly improved by our contact with the West. European planters have been the means of introducing important innovations. In the most out-of-the way places of India we find European planters carrying on agricultural experiments and improvements imperceptibly and noiselessly."

This naturally leads one to a consideration of the Raja's *Remarks on Settlement in India by Europeans*. It is a paper of rare personal and national importance. But as it raises problems of great magnitude, we refrain from dealing with it here. Suffice it to say that this his final literary deliverance holds up to the people of India the prospect of India having English as its *lingua franca*, India socially and in other respects westernized to some extent, India possibly independent and India the Enlightener of Asia.

Progressive political views imply confidence in the capacity of a people for continuous improvement. Raja Rammohun Roy believed that the people of India "have the same capability of improvement as any other civilized people." He did not believe that Asiatics were naturally an inferior race. In the course of one of his numerous religious controversies "A Christian" having indulged in a tirade

about persons being "degraded by Asiatic effeminacy," the Raja reminded him that almost all the ancient prophets and patriarchs venerated by Christians, nay, even Jesus Christ himself, were Asiatics.

On a perusal of the foregoing pages it will be found that with the exception of the agitation that has been going on for sometime past for the industrial regeneration of the country, Rammohun Roy laid the foundation of all the principal modern movements for the elevation of our people. Probably, as India is mainly an agricultural country and as in his days the pressure on land had not become abnormal owing to the indigenous industries not having disappeared then to the extent to which they have now declined, the industrial problem did not then press for solution with the same urgency as now. Nevertheless we find that the bearing of the system of caste on industrial prosperity did not escape the keen eyes of Rammohun: as No. VIII of his *Sambad Kaumudi* printed the "plea of a philanthropist, who observing the misery caused by prejudices of caste, urges the Hindus not to debar themselves thereby from mechanical pursuits, but to cultivate such arts as would tend to their comfort, happiness and independence."

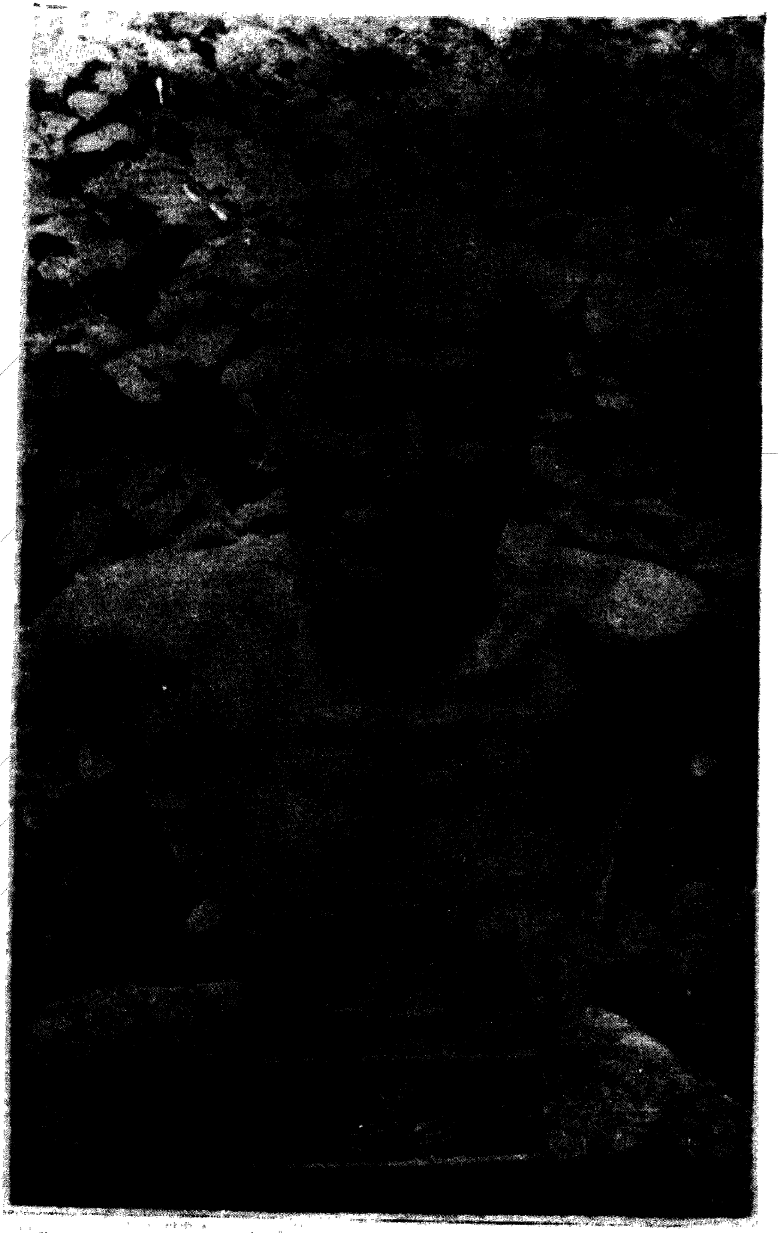
We conclude this introduction with the following estimate of his personality by his biographer, the late Miss Sophia Dobson Collett, who, though an English woman and a trinitarian Christian, seems on the whole to have understood the meaning of his life pretty accurately:—

"Rammohun stands in history as the living bridge over which India marches from her unmeasured past to her incalculable future. He was the arch which spanned the gulf that yawned between ancient caste and modern humanity, between superstition and science, between despotism and democracy, between immobile custom and a conservative progress, between a bewildering polytheism and a pure, if vague, Theism. He was the mediator of his people, harmonizing in his own person, often by means of his own solitary sufferings, the conflicting tendencies of immemorial tradition and of inevitable enlightenment."

"He embodies the new spirit which arises from the compulsory mixture of races and faiths and civilizations,—he embodies its freedom of enquiry, its thirst for science, its large human sympathy, its pure and sifted ethics, along with its reverent but not uncritical regard for the past, and prudent, even timid, disinclination towards revolt. But in the life of Rammohun we see what we hope yet to have shown us in the progress of India, that the secret of the whole movement is religious. Amid all his wanderings Rammohun was saved by his faith. * * * * He was a genuine outgrowth of the old Hindu stock; in a soil watered by new influences, and in an atmosphere charged with unwonted forcing power, but still a true scion of the old stock. The Rajah was no merely occidentalized oriental, no Hindu polished into the doubtful semblance of a European. Just as little was he, if we may use the term without offence, a spiritual Eurasian. If we follow the right line of his development we shall find that he leads the way from the orientalism of the past, not to, but through Western culture towards a civilization which is neither Western

nor Eastern, but something vastly larger and nobler than both. He preserves continuity throughout, by virtue of his religion, which again supplied the motive force of his progressive movement. The power that connected and restrained, as well as widened and impelled, was religion.

"Rammohun thus presents a most instructive and inspiring study for the New India of which he is the type and pioneer. He offers to the new democracy of the West a scarcely less valuable index of what our greatest Eastern dependency may yet become under the imperial sway of the British commonalty. There can be little doubt that, whatever future the destinies may have in store for India, that future will be largely shaped by the life and work of Rammohun Roy. And not the future of India alone. We stand on the eve of an unprecedented intermingling of East and West. The European and Asiatic streams of human development, which have often tinged each other before, are now approaching a confluence which bids fair to form the one ocean-river of the collective progress of mankind. In the presence of that greater Eastern question,—with its infinite ramifications, industrial, political, moral and religious,—the international problems of the passing hour, even the gravest of them, seem dwarfed into parochial pettiness. The nearing dawn of these unmeasured possibilities only throws into clearer prominence the figure of the man whose life-story we have told. He was, if not the prophetic type, at least the precursive hint, of the change that is to come."



DEATH-MASK OF RAJA RAMMOHUN ROY IN THE POSSESSION OF MR. A. M. BOSE.

THE

PRECEPTS OF JESUS

THE

GUIDE TO PEACE AND HAPPINESS;

EXTRACTED FROM

THE BOOKS OF THE NEW TESTAMENT.

ASCRIBED TO THE FOUR EVANGELISTS.

WITH

TRANSLATIONS INTO SUNGSCRIT AND BENGALEE.

CALCUTTA:

PRINTED AT THE BAPTIST MISSION PRESS, CIRCULAR ROAD.

1820.

INTRODUCTION.

A conviction in the mind of its total ignorance of the nature and of the specific attributes of the Godhead, and a sense of doubt respecting the real essence of the soul, give rise to feelings of great dissatisfaction with our limited powers, as well as with all human acquirements which fail to inform us on these interesting points. On the other hand, a notion of the existence of a supreme superintending power, the Author and Preserver of this harmonious system, who has organized and who regulates such an infinity of celestial and terrestrial objects, and a due estimation of that law which teaches that man should do unto others as he would wish to be done by, reconcile us to human nature, and tend to render our existence agreeable to ourselves and profitable to the rest of mankind. The former of these sources of satisfaction, *viz.*, a belief in God, prevails generally; being derived either from tradition and instruction, or from an attentive survey of the wonderful skill and contrivance displayed in the works of nature. The latter, although it is partially taught also in every system of religion with which I am acquainted, is principally inculcated by Christianity. This essential characteristic of the Christian religion I was for a long time unable to distinguish as such, amidst the various doctrines I found insisted upon in the writings of Christian authors, and in the conversation of those teachers of Christianity with whom I have had the honour of holding communication. Amongst these opinions, the most prevalent seems to be, that no one is justly entitled to the appellation of Christian who does not believe in the divinity of Christ and of the Holy Ghost, as well as in the divine nature of God, the Father of all created beings. Many allow a much greater latitude to the term Christian, and consider it as comprehending all who acknowledge the Bible to contain the revealed will of God, however they may differ from others in their interpretations of particular passages of Scripture; whilst some require from him who claims the title of Christian, only an adherence to the doctrines of Christ, as taught by himself, without insisting on implicit confidence in those of

the Apostles, as being, except when speaking from inspiration, like other men, liable to mistake and error. That they were so, is obvious from the several instances of differences of opinion amongst the Apostles recorded in the Acts and Epistles. *

Voluminous works, written by learned men of particular sects for the purpose of establishing the truth, consistency, rationality, and priority of their own peculiar doctrines, contain such variety of arguments, that I cannot hope to be able to adduce here any new reasonings of sufficient novelty and force to attract the notice of my readers. Besides, in matters of religion particularly men in general, through prejudice and partiality to the opinions which they once form, pay little or no attention to opposite sentiments (however reasonable they may be) and often turn a deaf ear to what is most consistent with the laws of nature, and conformable to the dictates of human reason and divine revelation. At the same time, to those who are not biased by prejudice, and who are, by the grace of God, open to conviction, a simple enumeration and statement of the respective tenets of different sects may be a sufficient guide to direct their inquiries in ascertaining which of them is most consistent with the sacred traditions, and most acceptable to common sense. For these reasons, I decline entering into any discussion on those points, and confine my attention at present to the task of laying before my fellow-creatures the words of Christ, with a translation from the English into Sanscrit, and the language of Bengal. I feel persuaded that by separating from the other matters contained in the New Testament, the moral precepts found in that book, these will be more likely to produce the desirable effect of improving the hearts and minds of men of different persuasions and degrees of understanding. For, historical and some other passages are liable to the doubts and disputes of free-thinkers and anti-christians, especially miraculous relations, which are much less wonderful than the fabricated tales handed down to the native of Asia,† and consequently would be apt, at best, to carry little weight with them. On the contrary, moral doctrines, tending evidently to the maintenance of the peace and harmony of mankind at large, are beyond the reach of metaphysical

* *Vide* Acts, ch. xi. 2, 3, ch. xv. 2, 7; I Corinthians, ch. i. 12; Galatians, ch. ii. 11, 12, 13.

† Agasti is famed for having swallowed the ocean, when it had given him offence, and having restored it by urinary evacuation: at his command, also, the Vindhya range of mountains prostrated itself, and so remains. *(Wilson's Dictionary.)*

perversion, and intelligible alike to the learned and to the unlearned. This simple code of religion and morality is so admirably calculated to elevate men's ideas to high and liberal notions of God, who has equally subjected all living creatures, without distinction of caste, rank or wealth, to change, disappointment, pain and death, and has equally admitted all to be partakers of the bountiful mercies which he has lavished over nature, and is also so well fitted to regulate the conduct of the human race in the discharge of their various duties to themselves, and to society, that I cannot but hope the best effects from its promulgation in the present form.

THE

PRECEPTS OF JESUS,

THE

GUIDE TO PEACE AND HAPPINESS.

---

*AND seeing the multitudes, he went up into a mountain: and when he was set, his disciples came unto him: and he opened his mouth, and taught them, saying, Blessed *are* the poor in spirit: for theirs is the kingdom of heaven. Blessed *are* they that mourn: for they shall be comforted. Blessed *are* the meek: for they shall inherit the earth. Blessed *are* they which do hunger and thirst after righteousness: for they shall be filled. Blessed *are* the merciful: for they shall obtain mercy. Blessed *are* the pure in heart: for they shall see God. Blessed *are* the peacemakers: for they shall be called the children of God. Blessed *are* they which are persecuted for righteousness' sake: for theirs is the kingdom of heaven. Blessed are ye, when *men* shall revile you, and persecute *you*, and shall say all manner of evil against you falsely, for my sake. Rejoice, and be exceedingly glad: for great *is* your reward in heaven: for so persecuted they the prophets which were before you.

Ye are the salt of the earth: but if the salt have lost his savour, wherewith shall it be salted? It is thenceforth good for nothing but to be cast out, and to be trodden under foot of men. Ye are the light of the world. A city that is set on a hill cannot be hid. Neither do men light a candle, and put it it under a bushel, but on a candlestick; and it giveth light unto all that are in the house. Let your light so shine before men, that they may see your good works, and glorify your Father which is in heaven.

Think not that I am come to destroy the Law or the Prophets: I am not come to destroy, but to fulfil. For verily I say unto you, Till heaven and earth pass, one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass from

---

* Matthew, chap. v.

the law, till all be fulfilled. Whosoever therefore shall break one of these least commandments, and shall teach men so, he shall be called the least in the kingdom of heaven: but whosoever shall do and teach *them*, the same shall be called great in the kingdom of heaven. For I say unto you, That except your righteousness shall exceed *the righteousness* of the Scribes and Pharisees, ye shall in no case enter into the kingdom of heaven.

Ye have heard that it was said by them of old time, Thou shalt not kill; and whosoever shall kill be in danger of the judgment: but I say unto you, That whosoever is angry with his brother without a cause, shall be in danger of the judgment: and whosoever shall say to his brother, Raca, shall be in danger of the council: but whosoever shall say, Thou fool, shall be in danger of hell-fire. Therefore, if thou bring thy gift to the altar, and there rememberest that thy brother hath aught against thee, leave there thy gift before the altar, go thy way: first be reconciled to thy brother, and then come and offer thy gift. Agree with thine adversary quickly whilst thou art in the way with him; lest at any time the adversary deliver thee to the judge, and the judge deliver thee to the officer, and thou be cast into prison. Verily I say unto thee, thou shalt by no means come out thence, till thou hast paid the uttermost farthing

Ye have heard that it was said by them of old time. Thou shalt not commit adultery: But I say unto you, That whosoever looketh on a woman to lust after her hath committed adultery with her already in his heart. And if thy right eye offend thee, pluck it out, and cast *it* from thee: for it is profitable for thee that one of thy members should perish, and not *that* thy whole body should be cast into hell. And if thy right hand offend thee, cut it off, and cast it from thee: for it is profitable for thee that one of thy members should perish, and not *that* thy whole body should be cast into hell. It hath been said, Whosoever shall put away his wife, let him give her a writing of divorcement: But I say unto you That whosoever shall put away his wife, saving for the cause of fornication, causeth her to commit adultery: and whosoever shall marry her that is divorced, committeth adultery.

Ye have heard that it hath been said, Thou shalt love thy neighbour, and hate thine enemy: But I say unto you, Love your enemies, bless them that curse you, do good to them that hate you, and pray for them which despitefully use you and persecute you; that ye may

be the children of your Father which is in heaven: for he maketh his sun to rise on the evil and on the good, and sendeth rain on the just and on the unjust. For if ye love them which love you, what reward have ye? do not even the publicans the same? And if ye salute your brethren only, what do ye more *than others*? do not even the publicans so? Be ye therefore perfect, even as your Father which is in heaven is perfect.

*Take heed that ye do not your alms before men, to be seen of them: otherwise ye have no reward of your Father, which is in heaven. Therefore, when thou doest *thine* alms, do not sound a trumpet before thee, as the hypocrites do in the synagogues and in the streets, that they may have glory of men. Verily I say unto you, They have their reward. But when thou doest alms, let not thy left hand know what thy right hand doeth: that thine alms may be in secret: and thy Father, which seeth in secret, himself shall reward thee openly.

And when thou prayest, thou shalt not be as the hypocrites *are*: for they love to pray standing in the synagogues and in the corners of the streets, that they may be seen of men. Verily I say unto you, They have their reward. But thou, when thou prayest, enter into thy closet, and, when thou hast shut thy door, pray to thy Father which is in secret; and thy Father, which seeth *in* secret, shall reward thee openly. But when ye pray, use not vain repetitions, as the heathen *do*: for they think, that they shall be heard for their much speaking. Be not ye therefore like unto them: for your Father knoweth what things ye have need of, before ye ask him. After this manner therefore pray ye: Our Father, which art in heaven, hallowed be thy name: Thy kingdom come: Thy will be done in earth, as *it is* in heaven: give us this day our daily bread: and forgive us our debts, as we forgive our debtors: and lead us not into temptation, but deliver us from evil: for thine is the kingdom and the power, and the glory, for ever. Amen. For if ye forgive men their trespasses, your heavenly Father will also forgive you: but if ye forgive not men their trespasses, neither will your Father forgive your trespasses.

Moreover, when ye fast, be not, as the hypocrites, of a sad countenance: for they disfigure their faces, that they may appear unto men to fast. Verily I say unto you, They have their reward. But

* Matthew, chap. vi.

thou, when thou fastest, anoint thine head, and wash thy face; that thou appear not unto men to fast, but unto thy Father who is in secret; and thy Father, who seeth in secret, shall reward thee openly.

Lay not up for yourselves treasures upon earth, where moth and rust doth corrupt, and where thieves break through and steal; but lay up for yourselves treasures in heaven, where neither moth nor rust doth corrupt, and where thieves do not break through nor steal for where your treasure is, there will your heart be also. The light of the body is the eye: if therefore thine eye be single, thy whole body shall be full of light. But if thine eye be evil, thy whole body shall be full of darkness. If therefore the light that is in thee be darkness, how great is that darkness!

No man can serve two masters: for either he will hate the one, and love the other; or else he will hold to the one, and despise the other. Ye cannot serve God and Mammon. Therefore I say unto you, Take no thought for your life, what ye shall eat, or what ye shall drink; nor yet for your body, what ye shall put on. Is not the life more than meat, and the body than raiment? Behold the fowls of the air: for they sow not, neither do they reap, nor gather into barns; yet your heavenly Father feedeth them. Are ye not much better than they? Which of you by taking thought can add one cubit unto his stature? And why take ye thought for raiment? Consider the lilies of the field, how they grow; they toil not, neither do they spin: and yet I say unto you, That even Solomon in all his glory was not arrayed like one of these. Wherefore, if God so clothe the grass of the field, which to-day is and to-morrow is cast into the oven, *shall he* not much more *clothe* you, O ye of little faith? Therefore take no thought, saying What shall we eat? or, What shall we drink? or, Where withal shall we be clothed? (For after all these things do the Gentiles seek:) for your heavenly Father knoweth that ye have need of all these things. But seek ye first the kingdom of God, and his righteousness; and all these things shall be added unto you. Take therefore no thought for the morrow: for the morrow shall take thought for the things of itself. Sufficient unto the day is the evil thereof.

* Judge not, that ye be not judged. For with what judgment ye judge, ye shall be judged: and with what measure ye mete, it shall be measured to you again. And why beholdest thou the mote that

* Matthew, chap. vii.

is in thy brother's eye, but considerest not the beam that is in thine own eye? Or how wilt thou say to thy brother, Let me pull out the mote out of thine eye; and, behold, a beam *is* in thine own eye? Thou hypocrite, first cast out the beam out of thine own eye; and then shalt thou see clearly to cast out the mote out of thy brother's eye. Give not that which is holy unto the dogs, neither cast ye your pearls before swine, lest they trample them under their feet and turn again and rend you. Ask, and it shall be given you; seek, and ye shall find; knock, and it shall be opened unto you: for every one that asketh receiveth; and he that seeketh findeth; and to him that knocketh it shall be opened. Or what man is there of you, whom if his son ask bread, will he give him a stone? Or if he ask a fish, will he give him a serpent? If ye then, being evil, know how to give good gifts unto your children, how much more shall your Father which is in heaven give good things to them that ask him? Therefore all things whatsoever ye would that men should do to you, do ye even so to them: for this is the law and the prophets.

Enter ye in at the strait gate: for wide *is* the gate, and broad *is* the way, that leadeth to destruction, and many there be which go in thereat: because strait is the gate, and narrow is the way, which leadeth unto life, and few there be that find it. Beware of false prophets, which come to you in sheep's clothing, but inwardly they are ravening wolves. Ye shall know them by their fruits. Do men gather grapes of thorns, or figs of thistles? Even so every good tree bringeth forth good fruit; but a corrupt tree bringeth forth evil fruit, neither *can* a corrupt tree bring forth good fruit. Every tree that bringeth not forth good fruit is hewn down, and cast into the fire. Wherefore by their fruits ye shall know them. Not every one that saith unto me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven; but he that doeth the will of my Father which is in heaven. Many will say to me in that day, Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in thy name? and in thy name have cast out devils? and in thy name done many wonderful works? And then will I profess unto them, I never knew you: depart from me ye that work iniquity.

Therefore whosoever heareth these sayings of mine, and doeth them, I will liken him unto a wise man, which built his house upon a rock: and the rain descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and beat upon that house; and it fell not: for it was founded upon a rock. And every one that heareth these sayings of mine, and

doeth them not, shall be likened unto a foolish man, which built his house upon the sand: and the rain descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and beat upon that house; and it fell: and great was the fall of it. And it came to pass, when Jesus had ended these sayings, the people were astonished at his doctrine: for he taught them as *one* having authority, and not as the scribes.

* And it came to pass, as Jesus sat at meat in the house, behold, many publicans and sinners came and sat down with him and his disciples. And when the Pharisees saw *it*, they said unto his disciples, Why eateth your Master with publicans and sinners? But when Jesus heard *that*, he said unto them, They that be whole need not a physician, but they that are sick. But go ye and learn what *that* meaneth, I will have mercy, and not sacrifice: for I am not come to call the righteous, but sinners to repentance. Then came to him the disciples of John, saying, Why do we and the Pharisees fast oft, but thy disciples fast not? And Jesus said unto them, Can the children of the bride-chamber mourn, as long as the bridegroom is with them? but the days will come, when the bridegroom shall be taken from them, and then shall they fast. No man putteth a piece of new cloth unto an old garment, for that which is put in to fill it up taketh from the garment, and the rent is made worse. Neither do men put new wine into old bottles: else the bottles break, and the wine runneth out, and the bottles perish: but they put new wine into new bottles, and both are preserved.

† Behold, I send you forth as sheep in the midst of wolves: be ye therefore wise as serpents, and harmless as doves. But beware of men: for they will deliver you up to the councils, and they will scourge you in their synagogues; and ye shall be brought before governors and kings for my sake, for a testimony against them and the Gentiles. But when they deliver you up, take no thought how or what ye shall speak: for it shall be given you in that same hour what ye shall speak. For it is not ye that speak, but the Spirit of your Father which speaketh in you. And the brother shall deliver up the brother to death, and the father the child: and the children shall rise up against *their* parents, and cause them to be put to death. And ye shall be hated of all *men* for my name's sake: but he that endureth to the end shall be saved. But when they persecute you in this city, flee ye into another: for verily I say unto you, Ye

* Matthew, chap. ix, 10. † Matthew, chap. x, 16.

shall not have gone over the cities of Israel, till the Son of man be come. The disciple is not above his master, nor the servant above his lord. It is enough for the disciple that he be as his master, and the servant as his lord. If they have called the master of the house Beelzebub, how much more *shall they call* them of his household? Fear them not therefore: for there is nothing covered, that shall not be revealed; and hid, that shall not be known. What I tell you in darkness, *that* speak ye in light: and what ye hear in the ear, *that* preach ye upon the house-tops. And fear not them which kill the body, but are not able to kill the soul: but rather fear him which is able to destroy both soul and body in hell. Are not two sparrows sold for a farthing? and one of them shall not fall on the ground without your Father. But the very hairs of your head are all numbered. Fear ye not therefore, ye are of more value than many sparrows. Whosoever, therefore, shall confess me before men, him will I confess also before my Father which is in heaven. But whosoever shall deny me before men, him will I also deny before my Father which is in heaven. Think not that I am come to send peace on earth: I came not to send peace, but a sword. For I am come to set a man at variance against his father, and the daughter against her mother, and the daughter-in-law against her mother-in-law. And a man's foes *shall* be they of his own household. He that loveth father or mother more than me is not worthy of me: and he that loveth son or daughter more than me is not worthy of me. And he that taketh not his cross, and followeth after me, is not worthy of me. He that findeth his life shall lose it: and he that loseth his life for my sake shall find it. He that receiveth you receiveth me, and he that receiveth me, receiveth him that sent me. He that receiveth a prophet in the name of a prophet shall receive a prophet's reward and he that receiveth a righteous man in the name of a righteous man, shall receive a righteous man's reward. And whosoever shall give to drink unto one of these little ones a cup of cold *water* only in the name of a disciple, verily I say unto you, he shall in no wise lose his reward.

* At that time Jesus answered and said, I thank thee, O Father, Lord of heaven and earth, because thou hast hid these things from the wise and prudent, and hast revealed them unto babes. Even, so father: for so it seemed good in thy sight. All things are delivered

* Matthew, chap. xi., 25.

unto me of my Father: and no man knoweth the Son, but the Father; neither knoweth any man the Father, save the Son, and *he* to whomsoever the Son will reveal *him*. Come unto me, all *ye* that labour and are heavy laden, and I will give you rest. Take my yoke upon you, and learn of me; for I am meek and lowly in heart: and ye shall find rest unto your souls. For my yoke *is* easy, and my burden is light.

At that time Jesus went on the sabbath day through the corn; and his disciples were an hungered, and began to pluck the ears of corn, and to eat. But when the Pharisees saw *it*, they said unto him, Behold, thy disciples do that which is not lawful to do upon the sabbath day. But he said unto them, Have ye not read what David did, when he was an hungered, and they that were with him; how he entered into the house of God, and did eat the shew-bread, which was not lawful for him to eat, neither for them which were with him, but only for the priests? Or have ye not read in the law, how that on the sabbath days, the priests in the temple profane the sabbath, and are blameless? But I say unto you, That in this place is *one* greater than the temple. But if ye had known what *this* meaneth, I will have mercy, and not sacrifice, ye would not have condemned the guiltless. For the Son of man is Lord even of the sabbath day.

And when he was departed thence, he went into their synagogue: and, Behold, there was a man which had *his* hand withered. And they asked him, saying, Is it lawful to heal on the sabbath days? that they might accuse him. And he said unto them, What man shall there be among you, that shall have one sheep, and if it fall into a pit on the sabbath day, will he not lay hold on it, and lift *it* out? How much then is a man better than a sheep? Wherefore it is lawful to do well on the sabbath days. Then saith he to the man, stretch forth thine hand. And he stretched *it* forth; and it was restored whole, like as the other.

† He that is not with me is against me; and he that gathereth not with me scattereth abroad. Wherefore I say unto you, All manner of sin and blasphemy *against* the *Holy* Ghost shall not be forgiven unto men. And whosoever speaketh a word against the Son of man, it shall be forgiven him: but whosoever speaketh against the *Holy* Ghost, it shall not be forgiven him, neither in this world, neither in the *world* to come. Either make the tree *good*, and his

* Matthew, chap. xii. † Matthew, chap. xii., 30.

fruit good; or else make the tree corrupt, and his fruit corrupt: for the tree is known by *his* fruit. O generation of vipers, how can ye, being evil, speak good things? for out of the abundance of the heart the mouth speaketh A good man, out of good the treasure of the heart, bringeth forth good things; and an evil man, out of the evil treasure bringeth forth evil things: But I say unto you, That every idle word that men shall speak, they shall give account thereof in the day of judgment. For by thy words thou shalt be justified, and by thy words thou shalt be condemned.

While he yet talked to the people, behold *his* mother and his brethren stood without, desiring to speak with him. Then one said unto him, Behold, thy mother and brethren stand without, desiring to speak with thee. But he answered and said unto him that told him, Who is my mother? and who are my brethren? And he stretched forth his hand toward his disciples. and said, Behold my mother and my brethren! For whosoever shall do the will of my Father which is in heaven, the same is my brother, and sister, and mother.

*The same day went Jesus out of the house, and sat by the sea-side. And great multitudes were gathered together unto him, so that he went into a ship, and sat; and the whole multitude stood on the shore. And he spake many things unto them in parables, saying, Behold, a sower went forth to sow; and when he sowed, some *seeds* fell by the way side, and the fowls came and devoured them up: some fell upon stony places, where they had not much earth: and forthwith they sprung up, because they had no deepness of earth; and when the sun was up, they were scorched; and because they had no root, they withered away: and some fell among thorns; and the thorns sprung up, and choked them: but other fell into good ground, and brought forth fruit, some an hundredfold, some sixtyfold, some thirtyfold. Who hath ears to hear, let him hear. And the disciples came, and said unto him, Why speakest thou unto them in parables; He answered and said unto them, Because it is given unto you to know the mysteries of the kingdom of heaven, but to them it is not given. For whosoever hath, to him shall be given, and he shall have more abundance: but whosoever hath not, from him shall be taken away even that he hath. Therefore speak I to them in parables: because they seeing, see not; and hearing they hear not, neither do they understand. And in them is fulfilled the prophecy of Esaias,

* Matthew, chap. xiii.

which saith, By hearing ye shall hear, and shall not understand; and seeing ye shall see, and shall not perceive: for this people's heart is waxed gross, and *their* ears are dull of hearing, and their eyes they have closed; lest at any time they should see with *their* eyes, and hear with *their* ears, and should understand with *their* heart, and should be converted, and I should heal them. But blessed *are* your eyes, for they see: and your ears, for they hear. For verily I say unto you, That many prophets and righteous *men* have desired to see *those things* which ye see, and have not seen *them*; and to hear *those things* which ye hear, and have not heard *them*. Hear ye therefore the parable of the sower. When any one heareth the word of the kingdom, and understandeth *it* not, then cometh the wicked *one*, and catcheth away that which was sown in his heart. This is he which received seed by the wayside. But he that received the seed into stony places, the same is he that heareth the word, and anon with joy receiveth it; yet hath he not root in himself, but dureth for a while; for when tribulation or persecution ariseth because of the word, by and by he is offended. He also that received seed among the thorns is he that heareth the word; and the care of this world, and the deceitfulness of riches, choke the word, and he becometh unfruitful. But he that received seed into the ground is he that heareth the word, and understandeth *it*; which also beareth fruit, and bringeth forth, some an hundredfold, some sixty, some thirty. Another parable put he forth unto them, saying, The kingdom of heaven is likened unto a man which sowed good seed in his field: but while men slept, his enemy came and sowed tares among the wheat, and went his way. But when the blade was sprung up, and brought forth fruit, then appeared the tares also. So the servants of the householder came and said unto him, Sir, didst not thou sow good seed in thy field? from whence then hath it tares? He said unto them, An enemy hath done this. The servants said unto him, Wilt thou then that we go and gather them up? But he said, Nay; lest while ye gather up the tares, ye root up also the wheat with them. Let both grow together until the harvest: and in the time of harvest I will say to the reapers, Gather ye together first the tares, and bind them in bundles to burn them: but gather the wheat into my barn. Another parable put he forth unto them, saying, The kingdom of heaven is like to a grain of mustard-seed, which a man took, and sowed in his field: which indeed is the least of all

seeds: but when it is grown, it is the greatest among herbs and becometh a tree, so that the birds of the air come and lodge in the branches thereof. Another parable spake he unto them: The kingdom of heaven is like unto leaven, which a woman took, and hid in three measures of meal, till the whole was leavened. All these things spake Jesus unto the multitude in parables; and without a parable spake he not unto them: that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophet, saying, I will open my mouth in parables; I will utter things which have been kept secret from the foundation of the world. Then Jesus sent the multitude away, and went into the house: and his disciples came unto him, saying, Declare unto us the parable of the tares of the field. He answered and said unto them, He that soweth the good seed is the Son of man; the field is the world; the good seed are the children of the kingdom; but the tares are the children of the wicked *one*: the enemy that sowed them is the devil; the harvest is the end of the world; and the reapers are the angels. As therefore the tares are gathered and burned in the fire; so shall it be in the end of this world. The Son of man shall send forth his angels, and they shall gather out of his kingdom all things that offend, and them which do iniquity; and shall cast them unto a furnace of fire: there shall be wailing and gnashing of teeth. Then shall the righteous shine forth as the sun in the kingdom of their Father. Who hath ears to hear, let him hear.

* Then came to Jesus scribes and Pharisees, which were of Jerusalem, saying, Why do thy disciples transgress the tradition of the elders? for they wash not their hands when they eat bread. But he answered and said unto them, Why do ye also transgress the commandment of God by your tradition? For God commanded, saying, Honour thy Father and mother: and, He that curseth father or mother let him die the death. But ye say, Whosoever shall say to *his* father or *his* mother, *It is* a gift, by whatsoever thou mightest be profited by me; and honour not his father or his mother, *he shall be free*. Thus have ye made the commandment of God of none effect by your tradition. *Ye* hypocrites! well did Esaias prophesy of you, saying, This people draweth nigh unto me with their mouth, and honoureth me with *their* lips; but their heart is far from me. But in vain do they worship me, teaching *for* doctrines the commandments of men. And he called the multitude, and said

* Matthew, chap. xv.

unto them, Hear, and understand: not that which goeth into the mouth defileth a man; but that which cometh out of the mouth, this defileth a man. Then came his disciples, and said unto him, Knowest thou that the Pharisees were offended after they heard this saying? But he answered and said, Every plant which my heavenly Father hath not planted, shall be rooted up. Let them alone: they be blind leaders of the blind: and if the blind lead the blind, both shall fall into the ditch. Then answered Peter and said unto him, Declare unto us this parable. And Jesus said, Are ye also yet without understanding? Do not ye yet understand, that whatsoever entereth in at the mouth, goeth into the belly, and is cast out into the draught? But those things which proceed out of the mouth come forth from the heart; and they defile the man. For out of the heart proceed evil thoughts, murders, adulteries, fornications, thefts, false witness, blasphemies: these are *the things* which defile a man; but to eat with unwashen hands defileth not a man.

* And when his disciples were come to the other side, they had forgotten to take bread. Then Jesus said unto them, Take heed and beware of the leaven of the Pharisees and the Sadducees. And they reasoned among themselves, saying, *It is* because we have taken no bread. *Which* when Jesus perceived, he said unto them, O ye of little faith, why reason ye among yourselves, because ye have brought no bread? How is it that ye do not understand that I spake *it* not to you concerning bread, that ye should beware of the leaven of the Pharisees and of the Sadducees? Then understood they how that he bade *them* not beware of the leaven of bread, but of the doctrine of the Pharisees and of the Sadducees.

When Jesus came into the coasts of Cæsarea Philippi, he asked his disciples, saying, Whom do men say that I, the Son of man, am? And they said, Some *say that thou art* John the Baptist; some, Elias; and others, Jeremias, or one of the prophets. He saith unto them, But whom say ye that I am? And Simon Peter answered and said, Thou art the Christ, the Son of the living God. And Jesus answered and said unto him, Blessed art thou, Simon Bar-jona; for flesh and blood hath not revealed *it* unto thee, but my Father which is in heaven. And I say also unto thee, That thou art Peter, and upon this rock I will build my church; and the gates of hell shall not prevail against it. And I will give unto thee the keys of the kingdom of heaven: and whatsoever thou

* Matthew, chap. xvi., 5.

shalt bind on earth shall be bound in heaven: and whatsoever thou shalt loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven. Then charged he his disciples, that they should tell no man that he was Jesus the Christ. From that time forth began Jesus to shew unto his disciples, how that he must go unto Jerusalem, and suffer many things of the elders and chief priests, and scribes, and be killed, and be raised again the third day. Then Peter took him, and began to rebuke him, saying, Be it far from thee, Lord: this shall not be unto thee. But he turned, and said unto Peter, Get thee behind me, Satan: thou art an offence unto me, for thou savourest not the things that be of God, but those that be of men. Then said Jesus unto his disciples, If any *man* will come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross, and follow me: for whosoever will save his life shall lose it: and whosoever will lose his life for my sake, shall find it. For what is a man profited, if he shall gain the whole world, and lose his own soul? or what shall a man give in exchange for his soul? For the Son of man shall come in the glory of his Father with his angels; and then he shall reward every man according to his works. Verily I say unto you, There be some standing here, which shall not taste of death, till they see the Son of man coming in his kingdom.

* At the same time came the disciples unto Jesus saying, Who is the greatest in the kingdom of heaven? And Jesus called a little child unto him, and set him in the midst of them, and said, Verily I say unto you, Except ye be converted, and become as little children ye shall not enter into the kingdom of heaven. Whosoever therefore shall humble himself as this little child, the same is greatest in the kingdom of heaven. And whoso shall receive one such little child in my name, receiveth me. But whoso shall offend one of these little ones which believe in me, it were better for him that a millstone were hanged about his neck, and *that* he were drowned in the depth of the sea.

Woe unto the world because of offences! for it must needs be that offences come; but woe to that man by whom the offence cometh! Wherefore, if thy hand or thy foot offend thee, cut them off, and cast *them* from thee: it is better for thee to enter into life halt or maimed, rather than having two hands or two feet to be cast into everlasting fire. And if thine eye offend thee, pluck it out, and cast *it* from thee: it is better for thee to enter into life with one eye, rather than having

* Matthew, chap. xviii.

two eyes to be cast into hell-fire. Take heed that ye despise not one of these little ones; for I say unto you, That in heaven their angels do always behold the face of my Father which is in heaven. For the Son of man is come to save that which was lost. How think ye? If a man have an hundred sheep, and one of them be gone astray, doth he not leave the ninety and nine and goeth into the mountains, and seeketh that which is gone astray? And if so be that he find it, verily I say unto you, he rejoiceth more of that *sheep*, than of the ninety and nine which went not astray. Even so, it is not the will of your Father which is in heaven, that one of these little ones should perish. Moreover if thy brother shall trespass against thee, go and tell him his fault between thee and him alone: if he shall hear thee thou hast gained thy brother. But if he will not hear *thee*, *then* take with thee one or two more, that in the mouth of two or three witnesses every word may be established. And if he shall neglect to hear them, tell it unto the church: but if he neglect to hear the church, let him be unto thee as an heathen man and a publican. Verily I say unto you, Whatsoever ye shall bind on earth shall be bound in heaven: and whatsoever ye shall loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven. Again I say unto you, That if two of you shall agree on earth as touching anything that they shall ask, it shall be done for them of my Father which is in heaven. For where two or three are gathered together in my name, there am I in the midst of them.

Then came Peter to him, and said, Lord, how oft shall my brother sin against me, and I forgive him? till seven times? Jesus saith unto him, I say not unto thee, Until seven times; but Until seventy times seven. Therefore is the kingdom of heaven likened unto a certain king, which would take account of his servants. And when he had begum to reckon, one was brought unto him which owed him ten thousand talents. But forasmuch as he had not to pay, his lord commanded him to be sold, and his wife, and children, and all that he had, and payment to be made. The servant therefore fell down, and worshipped him, saying, Lord, have patience with me, and I will pay thee all. Then the lord of that servant was moved with compassion, and loosed him, and forgave him the debt. But the same servant went out, and found one of his fellow-servants which owed him an hundred pence; and he laid hands on him, and took *him* by the throat, saying, Pay me that thou owest. And his fellow-servant

fell down at his feet, and besought him, saying, Have patience with me, and I will pay thee all. And he would not; but went and cast him into prison, till he should pay the debt. So when his fellow-servants saw what was done, they were very sorry, and came and told unto their lord all that was done. Then his lord, after that he had called him, said unto him, O thou wicked servant, I forgave thee all that debt, because thou desiredst me: shouldest not thou also have had compassion on thy fellow-servant, even as I had pity on thee? And his lord was wroth, and delivered him to the tormentors, till he should pay all that was due unto him. So likewise shall my heavenly Father do also unto you, if ye from your hearts forgive not every one his brother their trespasses.

* The Pharisees also came unto him, tempting him, and saying unto him, Is it lawful for a man to put away his wife for every cause? And he answered and said unto them, Have ye not read, that He which made *them* at the beginning, made them male and female; and said, For this cause shall a man leave father and mother, and shall cleave to his wife; and they twain, shall be one flesh? Wherefore they are no more twain, but one flesh. What therefore God hath joined together, let not man put asunder. They say unto him, Why did Moses then command to give a writing of divorcement, and to put her away? He saith unto them, Moses because of the hardness of your hearts, suffered you to put away your wives: but from the beginning it was not so. And I say unto you, Whosoever shall put away his wife, except *it be* for fornication, and shall marry another, committeth adultery: and whoso marrieth her which is put away doth commit adultery. His disciples say unto him, If the case of the man be so with *his* wife, it is not good to marry. But he said unto them, All *men* cannot receive this saying, save *they* to whom it is given. For there are some eunuchs which were so born from *their* mother's womb; and there are some eunuchs which were made eunuchs of men; and there be eunuchs which have made themselves eunuchs for the kingdom of heaven's sake. He that is able to receive *it*, let him receive *it*.

Then were there brought unto him little children, that he should put *his* hands on them, and pray: and the disciples rebuked them. But Jesus said, Suffer little children, and forbid them not, to come unto me: for of such is the kingdom of heaven. And he laid *his* hands on

* Matthew, chap. xix., 3.

them, and departed thence. And, behold, one came and said unto him, Good Master, what good thing shall I do, that I may have eternal life? And he said unto him, Why callest thou me good? *there* is none good but one, *that is*, God: but if thou wilt enter into life, keep the commandments. He saith unto him, Which? Jesus said, Thou shalt do no murder, Thou shalt not commit adultery; Thou shalt not steal, Thou shalt not bear false witness, Honour *thy* father and *thy* mother: and, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself. The young man saith unto him, All these things have I kept from my youth up: what lack I yet? Jesus said unto him, If thou wilt be perfect, go *and* sell that thou hast, and give to the poor, and thou shalt have treasure in heaven; and come *and* follow me. But when the young man heard that saying, he went away sorrowful: for he had great possessions. Then said Jesus unto his disciples, Verily I say unto you, That a rich man shall hardly enter into the kingdom of heaven. And again I say unto you, It is easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle, than for a rich man to enter into the kingdom of God. When his disciples heard *it*, they were exceedingly amazed, saying, Who then can be saved? But Jesus beheld *them*, and said unto them, With men this is impossible; but with God all things are possible. Then answered Peter and said unto him, Behold, we have forsaken all, and followed thee; what shall we have therefore? And Jesus said unto them, Verily I say unto you, That ye which have followed me, in the regeneration when the Son of man shall sit on the throne of his glory, ye also shall sit upon twelve thrones, judging the twelve tribes of Israel. And every one that hath forsaken houses, or brethren, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife or children, or lands for my name's sake, shall receive an hundredfold, and shall inherit everlasting life. But many *that are* first shall be last; and the last *shall be* first.

* For the kingdom of heaven is like unto a man *that is* an householder, which went out early in the morning to hire labourers into his vineyard. And when he had agreed with the labourers for a penny a day, he sent them into his vineyard. And he went out about the third hour, and saw others standing idle in the market place, and said unto them, Go ye also into the vineyard, and whatsoever is right, I will give you. And they went their way. Again he went out about the sixth and ninth hour, and did likewise. And about the eleventh hour he went out, and found others standing idle, and saith unto them, Why

* Matthew, chap. xx.

stand ye here all the day idle? They say unto him, Because no man hath hired us. He said unto them, Go ye also into the vineyard; and whatsoever is right *that* shall ye receive. So when even was come, the lord of the vineyard saith unto his steward, Call the labourers, and give them *their* hire, beginning from the last unto the first. And when they came that *were hired* about the eleventh hour, they received every man a penny. But when the first came, they supposed that they should have received more; and they likewise received every man a penny. And when they had received *it*, they murmured against the goodman of the house, saying, These last have wrought *but* one hour, and thou hast made them equal unto us, which have borne the burden and heat of the day. But he answered one of them, and said, Friend, I do thee no wrong: didst not thou agree with me for a penny? Take *that* thine *is*, and go thy way: I will give unto this last, even as unto thee. Is it not lawful for me to do what I will with mine own? Is thine eye evil, because I am good? So the last shall be first, and the first last: for many be called, but few chosen.

Then came to him the mother of Zebedee's children with her sons, worshipping *him*, and desiring a certain thing of him. And he said unto her, What wilt thou? She saith unto him, Grant that these my two sons may sit, the one on thy right hand, and the other on the left, in thy kingdom. But Jesus answered and said, Ye know not what ye ask. Are ye able to drink of the cup that I shall drink of, and to be baptized with the baptism that I am baptized with? They say unto him, We are able. And he saith unto them, Ye shall drink indeed of my cup, and be baptized with the baptism that I am baptized with: but to sit on my right hand, and on my left, is not mine to give, but *it shall be given to them* for whom it is prepared of my Father. And when the ten heard *it*, they were moved with indignation against the brethren. But Jesus called them *unto him*, and said, Ye know that the princes of the Gentiles exercise dominion over them, and they that are great exercise authority upon them. But it shall not be so among you: but whosoever will be great among you, let him be your minister; and whosoever will be chief among you, let him be your servant: even as the Son of man came not to be ministered unto, but to minister, and to give his life a ransom for many.

* And when he was come into the temple, the chief priests and the elders of the people came unto him as he was teaching, and said,

* Matthew, chap. xxi. 23.

By what authority doest thou these things? and who gave thee this authority! And Jesus answered and said unto them, I also will ask you one thing which if ye tell me, I in likewise will tell you by what authority I do these things. The baptism of John, whence was it? from heaven, or of men? And they reasoned with themselves, saying, If we shall say from heaven; he will say unto us, why did ye not then believe him? But if we shall say, of men; we fear the people; for all hold John as a prophet. And they answered Jesus, and said, We cannot tell. And he said unto them, Neither tell I you by what authority I do these things. But what think ye? A *certain* man had two sons; and he came to the first, and said, son, go work to-day in my vineyard. He answered, and said, I will not: but afterward he repented, and went. And he came to the second, and said likwise. And he answered and said, I *go* sir: and went not. Whether of the twain did the will of *his* father? They say unto him, The first. Jesus saith unto them, Verly I say unto you, That the publicans and the harlots go into the kingdom of God before you. For John came unto you in the way of righteousness, and ye believed him not: but the publicans and the harlots believed him: and ye when ye had seen *it*, repented not afterward, that ye might believe him. Hear another parable: There was a certain householder, which planted a vineyard, and hedged it round about, and digged a wine-press in it, and built a tower, and let it out to husbandmen, and went into a far country: and when the time of the fruit drew near, he sent his servants to the husbandmen, that they might receive the fruits of it. And the husbandmen took his servants, and beat one, and killed another, and stoned another. Again he sent other servants more than the first: and they did unto them likewise. But last of all he sent unto them his son, saying, They will reverence my son. But when the husbandmen saw the son, they said among themselves, This is the heir; come, let us kill him, and let us seize on his inheritance. And they caught him, and cast *him* out of the vineyard, and slew *him*. When therefore the lord of the vineyard cometh, what will he do unto those husbandmen? They say unto him, He will miserably destroy those wicked men, and will let out *his* vineyard unto other husbandmen, which shall render him the fruits in their seasons. Jesus saith unto them, Did ye never read in the scriptures, The stone which the builders rejected, the same is become the head of the corner: this is the Lord's doing, and it is

marvellous in our eyes? Therefore say I unto you, the kingdom of God shall be taken from you, and given to a nation bringing forth the fruits thereof. And whosoever shall fall on this stone shall be broken: but on whomsoever it shall fall, it will grind him to powder.

[2] The kingdom of heaven is like unto a certain king which made a marriage for his son, and sent forth his servants to call them that were bidden to the wedding: and they would not come. Again, he sent forth other servants, saying, Tell them which are bidden, Behold, I have prepared my dinner: my oxen and *my* fatlings *are* killed, and all things *are* ready: come unto the marriage. But they made light of *it*, and went their ways, one to his farm, another to his merchandise: And the remnant took his servants, and entreated *them* spitefully, and slew *them*. But when the king heard *thereof*, he was wroth: and he sent forth his armies, and destroyed those murderers, and burned up their city. Then saith he to his servants, The wedding is ready, but they which were bidden were not worthy. Go ye therefore into the highways, and as many as ye shall find, bid to the marriage. So those servants went out into the highways, and gathered together all as many as they found, both bad and good: and the wedding was furnished with guests. And when the king came in to see the guests, he saw there a man which had not on a wedding garment: and he saith unto him, Friend, how camest thou in hither not having a wedding garment? And he was speechless. Then said the king to the servants, Bind him hand and foot, and take him away, and cast *him* into outer darkness; there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth. For many are called, but few *are* chosen.

Then went the Pharisees, and took counsel how they might entangle him in *his* talk. And they sent out unto him their disciples with the Herodians, saying, Master we know, that thou art true, and teachest the way of God in truth, neither carest thou for any *man*; for thou regardest not the person of men. Tell us therefore what thinkest thou; Is it lawful to give tribute unto Cæsar, or not? But Jesus perceived their wickedness, and said, Why tempt ye me, *ye* hypocrites? Shew me the tribute money. And they brought unto him a penny, And he saith unto them, Whose *is* this image and superscription? They say unto him, Cæsar's. Then saith he unto them, Render therefore unto Cæsar the things which are Cæsar's; and unto God the things

[2] Matthew, chap. xxii, 2.

that are God's. When they had heard *these words*, they marvelled and left him, and went their way.

The same day came to him the Sadducees, which say that there is no resurrection, and asked him, saying, Master, Moses said, If a man die, having no children, his brother shall marry his wife, and raise up seed unto his brother. Now there were with us seven brethren: and the first, when he had married a wife, deceased, and, having no issue, left his wife unto his brother: likewise the second also, and the third, unto the seventh. And last of all, the woman died also. Therefore in the resurrection whose wife shall she be of seven? for they all had her. Jesus answered and said unto them, Ye do err, not knowing the scriptures, nor the power of God. For in the resurrection they neither marry, nor are given in marriage, but are as the angels of God in heaven. But as touching the resurrection of the dead, have ye not read that which was spoken unto you by God, saying, I am the God of Abraham, and the God of Issac, and the God of Jacob? God is not the God of the dead, but of the living. And when the multitude heard *this*, they were astonished at his doctrine.

But when the Pharisees had heard that he had put the Sadducees to silence, they were gathered together. Then one of them, *which was* a lawyer, asked *him a question*, tempting him, and saying, Master, which *is* the great commandment in the law? Jesus said unto him, Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind. This is the first and great commandment. And the second is like unto it, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself. On these two commandments hang all the law and the prophets.

While the Pharisees were gathered together, Jesus asked them, saying, What think ye of Christ? whose son is he? They say unto him, *The son* of David. He saith unto them, How then, doth David in spirit call him Lord? saying, the Lord said unto my Lord, Sit thou on my right hand, till I make thine enemies thy footstool? If David then call him Lord, how is he his son? And no man was able to answer him a word; neither durst any *man*, from that day forth, ask him any more *questions*.

* Then spake Jesus to the multitude, and to his disciples, saying The Scribes and the Pharisees sit in Moses' seat: all therefore whatsoever they bid you observe, *that* observe and do; but do not ye after

* Matthew, chap. xxiii.

their works: for they say, and do not. For they bind heavy burdens and grievous to be borne, and lay *them* on men's shoulders; but they *themselves* will not move them with one of their fingers. But all their works they do for to be seen of men: they make broad their phylacteries, and enlarge the borders of their garments, and love the uppermost rooms at feasts, and the chief seats in the synagogues, and greetings in the markets, and to be called of men, Rabbi, Rabbi. But be not ye called Rabbi: for one is your Master, *even* Christ; and all ye are brethren. And call no *man* your father upon the earth: for one is your Father, which is in heaven. Neither be ye called masters: for one is your Master, *even* Christ. But he that is greatest among you shall be your servant. And whosoever shall exalt himself shall be abased; and he that shall humble himself shall be exalted. But woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye shut up the kingdom of heaven against men: for ye neither go in *yourselves*, neither suffer ye them that are entering to go in. Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye devour widows' houses, and for a pretence make long prayer: therefore ye shall receive the greater damnation. Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye compass sea and land to make one proselyte; and when he is made, ye make him two-fold more the child of hell than yourselves. Woe unto you, *ye* blind guides! which say, Whosoever shall swear by the temple, it is nothing; but whosoever shall swear by the gold of the temple, he is a debtor. *Ye* fools and blind: for whether is greater, the gold, or the temple that sanctifieth the gold? And, Whosoever shall swear by the altar, it is nothing; but whosoever sweareth by the gift that is upon it, he is guilty. *Ye* fools and blind: for whether *is* greater, the gift, or the altar that sanctifieth the gift? Whoso therefore shall swear by the altar, sweareth by it, and by all things thereon. And whoso shall swear by the temple, sweareth by it, and by him that dwelleth therein. And he that shall swear by heaven sweareth by the throne of God, and by him that sitteth thereon. Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye pay tithe of mint and anise and cummin, and have omitted the weightier *matters* of the law, judgment, mercy, and faith: these ought ye to have done, and not to leave the other undone. Ye blind guides, which strain at a gnat, and swallow a camel. Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye make clean the outside of the cup and of the platter, but within they are full of extortion and excess. *Thou*

G 3785

blind Pharisee, cleanse first that *which is* within the cup and the platter, that the outside *of* them may be clean also. Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye are like unto whited sepulchres, which indeed appear beautiful outward, but are within full of dead *men's* bones, and of all uncleanness. Even so ye also outwardly appear righteous unto men, but within ye are full of hypocrisy and iniquity. Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! because ye build the tombs of the prophets, and garnish the sepulchres of the righteous, and say, If we had been in the days of our fathers, we would not have been partakers with them in the blood of the prophets. Wherefore ye be witnesses unto yourselves, that ye are the children of them which killed the prophets. Fill ye up then the measure of your fathers. *Ye* serpents, *ye* generation of vipers! how can ye escape the damnation of hell? Wherefore, behold, I send unto you prophets, and wise men, and scribes: and *some* of them ye shall kill and crucify; and *some* of them shall ye scourge in your synagogues, and persecute *them* from city to city: that upon you may come all the righteous blood shed upon the earth, from the blood of righteous Abel unto the blood of Zacharias son of Barachias, whom ye slew between the temple and the altar. Verily I say unto you, All these things shall come upon this generation. O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, *thou* that killest the prophets, and stonest them which are sent unto thee, how often would I have gathered thy children together, even as a hen gathereth her chickens under *her* wings, and ye would not! Behold, your house is left unto you desolate. For I say unto you, Ye shall not see me henceforth, till ye shall say, Blessed *is* he that cometh in the name of the Lord.

* Watch therefore; for ye know not what hour your Lord doth come. But know this, that if the good man of the house had known in what watch the thief would come, he would have watched, and would not have suffered his house to be broken up. Therefore be ye also ready: for in such an hour as ye think not the Son of man cometh. Who then is a faithful and wise servant, whom his lord hath made ruler over his household, to give them meat in due season? Blessed *is* that servant, whom his lord, when he cometh, shall find so doing. Verily I say unto you, That he shall make him ruler over all his goods. But and if that evil servant shall say in his heart, My lord delayeth his coming; and shall begin to smite *his* fellow-servants, and to eat and

* Matthew, chap. xxiv., 42.

drink with the drunken; the lord of that servant shall come in a day when he looketh not for *him* and in an hour that he is not aware of, and shall cut him asunder, and appoint *him* his portion with the hypocrites: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

* Then shall the kingdom of heaven be likened unto ten virgins, which took their lamps, and went forth to meet the bridegroom. And five of them were wise, and five *were* foolish. They that *were* foolish took their lamps, and took no oil with them: but the wise took oil in their vessels with their lamps. While the bridegroom tarried they all slumbered and slept. And at midnight there was a cry made, Behold, the bridegroom cometh; go ye out to meet him. Then all those virgins arose, and trimmed their lamps. And the foolish said unto the wise, Give us of your oil; for our lamps are gone out. But the wise answered, saying, *Not so*; lest there be not enough for us and you: but go ye rather to them that sell, and buy for yourselves. And while they went to buy, the bridegroom came; and they that were ready went in with him to the marriage: and the door was shut. Afterward came also the other virgins, saying, Lord, Lord, open to us. But he answered and said, Verily I say unto you, I know you not. Watch therefore, for ye know neither the day nor the hour wherein the Son of man cometh. For *the kingdom of heaven is* as a man travelling into a far country, *who* called his own servants, and delivered unto them his goods. And unto one he gave five talents, another two, and to another one; to every man according to his several ability; and straightway took his journey. Then he that had received the five talents went and traded with the same, and made *them* other five talents. And likewise he that *had received* two, he also gained other two. But he that had received one, went and digged in the earth, and hid his lord's money. After a long time the lord of those servants cometh, and reckoneth with them. And so he that had received five talents came and brought other five talents, saying, Lord, thou deliveredst unto me five talents; Behold, I have gained beside them five talents more. His lord said unto him, Well done, *thou* good and faithful servant: thou hast been faithful over a few things, I will make thee ruler over many things: enter thou into the joy of thy lord. He also that had received two talents came and said, Lord, thou deliveredst unto me two talents: behold, I have gained two other talents beside them. His lord said unto him, Well done, good

* Matthew, chap. xxv.

and faithful servant; thou hast been faithful over a few things, I will make thee ruler over many things: enter thou into the joy of thy lord. Then he which had received the one talent came and said, Lord, I knew thee that thou art an hard man, reaping where thou hast not sown, and gathering where thou hast not strawed: and I was afraid, and went and hid thy talent in the earth: lo *there* thou hast *that is* thine. His Lord answered and said unto him, *Thou* wicked and slothful servant, thou knewest that I reap where I sowed not, and gather where I have not strawed; thou oughtest therefore to have put my money to the exchangers, and *then* at my coming I should have received mine own with usury. Take therefore the talent from him, and give *it* unto him which hath ten talents. For unto every one that hath shall be given, and he shall have abundance: but from him that hath not, shall be taken away even that which he hath. And cast ye the unprofitable servant into outer darkness: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth. When the Son of man shall come in his glory, and all the holy angels with him, then shall he sit upon the throne of his glory: and before him shall be gathered all nations: and he shall separate them one from another, as a shepherd divideth *his* sheep from the goats: and he shall set the sheep on his right hand, but the goats on the left. Then shall the King say unto them on his right hand, Come, ye blessed of my Father, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world: for I was an hungered, and ye gave me meat: I was thirsty, and ye gave me drink: I was a stranger, and ye took me in: naked, and ye clothed me: I was sick, and ye visited me: I was in prison, and ye came unto me. Then shall the righteous answer him, saying, Lord, when saw we thee an hungred, and fed *thee*? or thirsty, and gave *thee* drink? When saw we thee a stranger, and took *thee* in? or naked, and clothed *thee*? Or when saw we thee sick, or in prison, and came unto thee? And the King shall answer and say unto them, Verily I say unto you, Inasmuch as ye have done *it* unto one of the least of these my brethren, ye have done *it* unto me. Then shall he say also unto them on the left hand, Depart from me, ye cursed, into everlasting fire, prepared for the devil and his angels: for I was an hungred, and ye gave me no meat: I was thirsty, and ye gave me no drink: I was a stranger, and ye took me not in: naked, and ye clothed me not: sick, and in prison, and ye visited me not. Then shall they also answer him, saying Lord, when saw we thee an hung-

ered, or athirst, or a stranger, or naked, or sick, or in prison, and did not minister unto thee? Then shall he answer them, saying Verily I say unto you, Inasmuch as ye did *it* not to one of the least of these, ye did *it* not to me. And these shall go away into everlasting punishment: but the righteous into life eternal.

[e] And it came to pass, that, as Jesus sat at meat in his house, many publicans and sinners sat also together with Jesus and his disciples: for there were many, and they followed him. And when the scribes and Pharisees saw him eat with publicans and sinners, they said unto his disciples, How is it that he eateth and drinketh with publicans and sinners? When Jesus heard *it*, he saith unto them, They that are whole have no need of the Physician, but they that are sick: I came not to call the righteous, but sinners to repentance. And the disciples of John and of the Pharisees used to fast: and they come and say unto him, Why do the disciples of John and of the Pharisees fast, but thy disciples fast not? And Jesus said unto them, Can the children of the bride-chamber fast, while the bridegroom is with them, they cannot fast. But the days will come when the bridegroom shall be taken away from them, and then shall they fast in those days. No man also seweth a piece of new cloth on an old garment: else the new piece that filled it up taketh away from the old, and the rent is made worse. And no man putteth new wine into old bottles: else the new wine doth burst the bottles and the wine is spilled, and the bottles will be marred: but new wine must be put into new bottles.

And it came to pass, that he went through the corn fields on the sabbath day; his disciples began, as they went, to pluck the ears of corn. And the Pharisees said unto him, Behold, why do they on the sabbath day that which is not lawful? And he said unto them, Have ye never read what David did, when he had need, and was an hungered, he, and they that were with him? How he went into the house of God in the days of Abiathar the high priest, and did eat the shewbread, which is not lawful to eat but for the priests, and gave also to them which were with him? And he said unto them, The sabbath was made for man and not man for the sabbath: therefore the Son of man is Lord also of the sabbath.

† There came then his brethren and his mother, and, standing without, sent unto him, calling him. And the multitude sat about

[e] Mark, chap ii., 15. † Mark, chap. iii, 31.

him; and they said unto him, Behold, thy mother and thy brethren without seek for thee. And he answered them, saying, Who is my mother, or my brethren? And he looked round about on them which sat about him, and said, Behold my mother and my brethren! For whosoever shall do the will of God, the same is my brother, and my sister, and mother.

* And he taught them many things by parables, and said unto them in his doctrine, Hearken; Behold, there went out a sower to sow; and it came to pass, as he sowed, some fell by the way side, and the fowls of the air came and devoured it up. And some fell on stony ground, where it had not much earth; and immediately it sprang up, because it had no depth of earth: but when the sun was up, it was scorched; and because it had no root, it withered away. And some fell among thorns, and the thorns grew up, and choked it, and it yielded no fruit. And other fell on good ground, and did yield fruit that sprang up and increased; and brought forth, some thirty, and some sixty, and some an hundred. And he said unto them, He that hath ears to hear, let him hear. And when he was alone, they that were about him with the twelve, asked of him the parable. And he said unto them, Unto you it is given to know the mystery of the kingdom of God: but unto them that are without, all *these* things are done in parables: that seeing they may see, and not perceive; and hearing they may hear, and not understand; lest at any time they should be converted, and *their* sins should be forgiven them. And he said unto them, Know ye not this parable? and how then will ye know all parables? The sower soweth the word. And these are they by the way side, where the word is sown. But when they have heard, Satan cometh immediately, and taketh away the word that was sown in their hearts. And these are they likewise which are sown on stony ground; who, when they have heard the word, immediately receive it with gladness; and have no root in themselves, and so endure but for a time: afterward when affliction or persecution ariseth for the word's sake, immediately they are offended. And these are they which are sown among thorns; such as hear the word, and the cares of this world, and the deceitfulness of riches, and the lust of other things entering in, choke the word, and it becometh unfruitful. And these are they which are sown on good ground; such as hear the word, and receive *it*, and

* Mark, chap. iv, 2.

bring forth fruit, some thirtyfold, some sixty, and some an hundred. And he said unto them, Is a candle brought to be put under a bushel, or under a bed? and not to be set on a candle-stick? For there is nothing hid, which shall not be manifested; neither was anything kept secret, but that it should come abroad. If any man have ears to hear, let him hear. And he said unto them, Take heed what he hear: with what measure ye mete, it shall be measured to you: and unto you that hear shall more be given. For he that hath, to him shall be given: and he that hath not, from him shall be taken even that which he hath. And he said. So is the kingdom of God, as if a man should cast seed into the ground; and should sleep, and rise night and day, and the seed should spring and grow up, he knoweth not how; for the earth bringeth forth fruit of herself; first the blade, then the ear, after that the full corn in the ear. But when the fruit is brought forth, immediately he putteth in the sickle, because the harvest is come, And he said Whereunto shall we liken the kingdom of God! or with what comparison shall we compare it! *It is* like a grain of mustard seed, which, when it is sown in the earth, is less than all the seeds that be in the earth: but when it is sown, it groweth up, and becometh greater than all herbs, and shooteth out great branches; so that the fowls of the air may lodge under the shadow of it.

[o] Then the Pharisees and scribes asked him, Why walk not thy disciples according to the tradition of the elders, but eat bread with unwashen hands? He answered and said unto them, Well hath Esaias prophesied of you hypocrites, as it is written, This people honoureth me with *their* lips, but their heart is far from me. Howbeit, in vain do they worship me, teaching *for* doctrines the commandments of men. For laying aside the commandment of God, ye hold the tradition of men, *as* the washing of pots and cups: and many other such like things ye do. And he said unto them, Full well ye reject the commandment of God, that ye may keep your own tradition. For Moses said, Honour thy Father and thy Mother; and, Whoso curseth father or mother, let him die the death: but ye say, If a man shall say to his father or mother, *It is* Corban, that is to say, a gift, by whatsoever thou mightest be profited by me; *he shall be free.* And ye suffer him no more to do aught for his father or his mother: making the word of God of none effect through your tradition, which ye have

[o] Mark, chap. vii, 5.

delivered: and many such like things do ye. And when he called all the people *unto him*, he said unto them, Hearken unto me every one *of you* and understand: there is nothing from without a man, that entering into him can defile him: but the things which come out of him, these are they that defile the man. If any man have ears to hear, let him hear. And when he was entered into the house from the people, his disciples asked him concerning the parable. And he saith unto them, Are ye so without understanding also? Do ye not perceive, that whatsoever thing from without entereth into the man, it cannot defile him; because it entereth not into his heart, but into the belly, and goeth out into the draught, purging all meats? And he said, That which cometh out of the man, that defileth the man. For from within, out of the heart of men, proceed evil thoughts, adulteries, fornications, murders, thefts, covetousness, wickedness, deceit, lasciviousness, an evil eye, blasphemy, pride, foolishness: all these evil things come from within, and defile the man.

* And when he had called the people *unto him* with his disciples also, he said unto them, Whosoever will come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross, and follow me. For whosoever will save his life shall lose it; but whosoever shall lose his life for my sake and the gospel's, the same shall save it. For what shall it profit a man if he shall gain the whole world, and lose his own soul? Or what shall man give in exchange for his soul? Whosoever therefore shall be ashamed of me and of my words in this adulterous and sinful generation; of him also shall the Son of man be ashamed, when he cometh in the glory of his Father with the holy angels.

† And he came to Capernaum: and being in the house, he asked them, What was it that ye disputed among yourselves by the way? But they held their peace: for by the way they had disputed among themselves, who *should be* the greatest. And he sat down and called the twelve, and saith unto them, If any man desire to be first, *the same* shall be last of all, and servant of all. And he took a child, and set him in the midst of them: and when he had taken him into his arms, he said unto them, Whosoever shall receive one of such children in my name, receiveth me: and whosoever shall receive me, receiveth not me, but him that sent me.

And John answered him, saying, Master we saw one casting out devils in thy name, and he followeth not us: and we forbad him,

* Mark, chap. viii, 34. † Mark, chap. ix, 33.

because he followeth not us. But Jesus said, Forbid him not: for there is no man which shall do a miracle in my name, that can lightly speak evil of me. For he that is not against us is on our part. For whosoever shall give you a cup of water to drink in my name, because ye belong to Christ, verily I say unto you, he shall not lose his reward. And whosoever shall offend one of *these* little ones, that believe in me, it is better for him that a millstone were hanged about his neck, and he were cast into the sea. And if thy hand offend thee, cut it off: it is better for thee to enter into life maimed, than having two hands to go into hell, into the fire that never shall be quenched: where their worm dieth not, and the fire is not quenched. And if thy foot offend thee, cut it off: it is better for thee to enter halt into life, than having two feet to be cast into hell, into the fire that never shall be quenched: where their worm dieth not, and the fire is not quenched. And if thine eye offend thee, pluck it out: it is better for thee to enter into the kingdom of God with one eye, than having two eyes to be cast into hell fire: where their worm dieth not, and the fire is not quenched. For every one shall be salted with fire, and every sacrifice shall be salted with salt. Salt *is* good; but if the salt have lost his saltness, wherewith will ye season it? Have salt in yourselves, and have peace one with another.

* And they brought young children to him, that he should touch them: and *his* disciples rebuked those that brought *them*. But when Jesus saw *it*, he was much displeased, and said unto them, Suffer the little children to come unto me, and forbid them not: for of such is the kingdom of God. Verily I say unto you, Whosoever shall not receive the kingdom of God as a little child, he shall not enter therein. And he took them up in his arms, put *his* hands upon them, and blessed them.

And when he was gone forth into the way, there came one running, and kneeled to him, and asked him, Good Master, what shall I do that I may inherit eternal life? And Jesus said unto him, Why callest thou me good? *there is* none good but one, *that is* God. Thou knowest the commandments, Do not commit adultery, Do not kill, Do not steal, Do not bear false witness Defraud not, Honour thy father and mother. And he answered and said unto him, Master, all these have I observed from my youth. Then Jesus beholding him, loved him and said unto him, One thing thou lackest: go thy way,

* Mark, chap. x, 13.

sell whatsoever thou hast, and give to the poor, and thou shalt have treasure in heaven. and come, take up the cross, and follow me. And he was sad at that saying, and went away grieved: for he had great possessions. And Jesus looked round about, and saith unto his disciples, How hardly shall they that have riches enter into the kingdom of God! And the disciples were astonished at his words. But, Jesus answereth again, and saith unto them, Children how hard is it for them that trust in riches to enter into the kingdom of God! It is easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle, than for a rich man to enter into the kingdom of God. And they were astonished out of measure, saying among themselves, Who then can be saved? And Jesus looking upon them saith, With men *it is* impossible, but not with God: for with God all things are possible. Then Peter began to say unto him, Lo, we have left all, and have followed thee. And Jesus answered and said, Verily I say unto you, There is no man that hath left house, or brethren, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, or lands, for my sake, and the gospel's, but he shall receive an hundredfold now in this time, houses, and brethren, and sisters, and mothers, children and lands, with persecutions: and in the world to come eternal life. But many *that are* first shall be last; and the last first.

* And James and John, the sons of Zebedee, come unto him, saying, Master, we would that thou shouldest do for us whatsoever we shall desire. And he said unto them, What would ye that I should do for you? They said unto him, Grant unto us that we may sit, one on thy right hand, and the other on thy left hand, in thy glory. But Jesus said unto them, Ye know not what ye ask: can ye drink of the cup that I drink of? and be baptized with the baptism that I am baptized with? And they said unto him, We can. And Jesus said unto them, Ye shall indeed drink of the cup that I drink of: and with the baptism that I am baptized withal, shall ye be baptized: but to sit on my right hand and on my left hand is not mine to give; but *it shall be given to them* for whom it is prepared. And when the ten heard *it* they began to be much displeased with James and John. But Jesus called them *to him*, and saith unto them, Ye know that they which are accounted to rule over the Gentiles exercise lordship over them; and their great ones exercise authority upon them. But so shall it not be among you: but whosoever will be

* Mark, chap. x, 35.

great among you, shall be your minister, and whosoever of you will be the chiefest, shall be servant of all. For even the Son of man came not to be ministered unto, but to minister, and to give his life a ransom for many.

* Therefore I say unto you, What things soever ye desire, when ye pray, believe that ye receive *them*, and ye shall have *them*. And when ye stand praying, forgive, if ye have aught against any: that your Father also which is in heaven may forgive you your trespasses. But if ye do not forgive neither will your Father which is in Heaven forgive your trespasses.

† And they send unto him certain of the Pharisees and of the Herodians, to catch him in *his* words. And when they were come, they say unto him, Master, we know that thou art true, and carest for no man; for thou regardest not the person of men, but teachest the way of God in truth: Is it lawful to give tribute to Cæsar, or not? shall we give, or shall we not give? But he, knowing their hypocrisy, said unto them, Why tempt ye me? bring me a penny, that may I see *it*. And they brought *it*. And he saith unto them, Whose *is* this image and superscription? And they said unto him. Cæsar's. And Jesus answering said unto them, Render to Cæsar the things that are Cæsar's and to God the things that are God's. And they marvelled at him. Then came unto him the Sadducees, which say there is no resurrection; and they asked him, saying, Master, Moses wrote unto us, If a man's brother die, and leave *his* wife *behind him*, and leave no children, that his brother should take his wife, and raise up seed unto his brother. Now there were seven brethren: and the first took a wife and, dying left no seed. And the second took her, and died; neither left he any seed: and the third likewise. And the seven had her, and left no seed: last of all the woman died also. In the resurrection therefore, when they shall rise, whose wife shall she be of them? for the seven had her to wife. And Jesus answering said unto them, Do ye not therefore err, because ye know not the scriptures, neither the power of God? For when they shall rise from the dead, they neither marry, nor are given in marriage; but are as the angels which are in heaven. And as touching the dead, that they rise: have ye not read in the book of Moses, how in the bush God spake unto him, saying, I *am* the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac. and the God of Jacob? He is not

* Mark, chap. xi, 24. † Mark, chap. xii, 13

the God of the dead, but the God of the living: ye therefore do greatly err. And one of the scribes came, and having heard them reasoning together, and perceiving that he had answered them well, asked him, Which is the first commandment of all? And Jesus answered him, The first of all the commandments *is*, Hear, O Israel; The Lord our God is one Lord; and thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind, and with all thy strength: this *is* the first commandment. And the second *is* like, *namely* this, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself. There is none other commandment greater than these. And the scribe said unto him, Well, Master, thou hast said the truth: for there is one God; and there is none other but he; and to love him with all the heart, and with all the understanding, and with all the soul, and with all the strength, and to love *his* neighbour as himself, is more than all whole burnt offerings and sacrifices. And when Jesus saw that he answered discreetly, he said unto him, Thou art not far from the kingdom of God. And no man after that durst ask him *any question*.

* And Jesus sat over against the treasury, and beheld how the people cast money into the treasury: and many that were rich cast in much. And there came a certain poor widow, and she threw in two mites, which make a farthing. And he called *unto him* his disciples, and saith unto them, Verily I say unto you, That this poor widow hath cast more in, than all they which have cast into the treasury; for all *they* did cast in of their abundance, but she of her want did cast in all that she had, *even* all her living.

† And he came to Nazareth, where he had been brought up: and, as his custom was, he went into the synagogue on the sabbath day, and stood up for to read. And there was delivered unto him the book of the prophet Esaias. And when he had opened the book, he found the place where it was written, The Spirit of the Lord *is* upon me, because he hath anointed me to preach the gospel to the poor; he hath sent me to heal the broken-hearted, to preach deliverance to the captives, and recovering of sight to the blind, to set at liberty them that are bruised, to preach the acceptable year of the Lord. And he closed the book, and he gave *it* again to the minister, and sat down. And the eyes of all them that were in the synagogue were fastened on him. And he began to say unto them, This day is this scripture fulfilled in your ears. And all bare him witness, and

* Mark, chap. xii, 41. † Luke, chap. iv, 16.

wondered at the gracious words which proceeded out of his mouth. And they said, Is not this Joseph's son? And he said unto them, Ye will surely say unto me this proverb, Physician, heal thyself: whatsoever we have heard done in Capernaum, do also here in thy country. And he said, Verily I saw unto you, No prophet is accepted in his own country. But I tell you of a truth, many widows were in Israel in the days of Elias, when the heaven was shut up three years and six months, when great famine was throughout all the land; but unto none of them was Elias sent, save unto Sarepta, a *city* of Sidon, unto a woman *that was* a widow. And many lepers were in Israel in the time of Eliseus the prophet; and none of them was cleansed, saving Naaman the Syrian.

* But their scribes and Pharisees murmured against his disciples, saying, Why do ye eat and drink with publicans and sinners? And Jesus answering said unto them, They that are whole need not a physician; but they that are sick. I came not to call the righteous, but sinners to repentance. And he spake also a parable unto them; No man putteth a piece of a new garment upon an old; if otherwise, then both the new maketh a rent, and the piece that was *taken* out of the new agreeth not with the old. And no man putteth new wine into old bottles; else the new wine will burst the bottles, and be spilled, and the bottles shall perish. But new wine must be put into new bottles; and both are preserved. No man also having drunk old wine straightway desireth new: for he saith, The old is better.

† And it came to pass, on the second sabbath after the first, that he went through the corn fields; and his disciples plucked the ears of corn, and did eat, rubbing *them* in *their* hands. And certain of the Pharisees said unto them, Why do ye that which is not lawful to do on the sabbath days? And Jesus answering them said, Have ye not read so much as this, what David did, when himself was an hungred, and they which were with him; how he went into the house of God, and did take and eat the shew-bread, and gave also to them that were with him; which it is not lawful to eat, but for the priests alone? And he said unto them, That the Son of man is Lord also of the sabbath.

And it came to pass also on another sabbath, that he entered into the synagogue and taught: and there was a man whose right hand was withered. And the scribes and Pharisees watched him, whether

* Luke, chap. v, 30. † Luke, ch. vi, 1

he would heal on the sabbath day; that they might find an accusation against him. But he knew their thoughts, and said to the man which had the withered hand, Rise up, and stand forth in the midst. And he arose and stood forth. Then said Jesus unto them, I will ask one thing; Is it lawful on the sabbath days to do good, or to do evil? to save life, or to destroy *it*?

* And he lifted up his eyes on his disciples, and said, Blessed *be ye* poor: for yours is the kingdom of God. Blessed *are ye* that hunger now: for ye shall be filled. Blessed *are ye* that weep now: for ye shall laugh. Blessed are ye, when men shall hate you, and when they shall separate you *from their company*, and shall reproach *you*, and cast out your name as evil, for the Son of man's sake. Rejoice ye in that day, and leap for joy: for behold your reward *is* great in heaven: for in the like manner did their fathers unto the prophets. But woe unto you that are rich! for ye have received your consolation. Woe unto you that are full! for ye shall hunger. Woe unto you that laugh now! for ye shall mourn and weep. Woe unto you when all men shall speak well of you! for so did their fathers to the false prophets. But I say unto you which hear, Love your enemies, do good to them which hate you; bless them that curse you, and pray for them which despitefully use you. And unto him that smiteth thee on the *one* cheek offer also the other; and him that taketh away thy cloke forbid not *to take thy* coat also. Give to every man that asketh of thee; and of him that taketh away thy goods ask *them* not again. And as ye would that men should do to you, do ye also to them likewise. For if ye love them which love you, what thank have ye? for sinners also love those that love them. And if ye do good to them which do good to you, what thank have ye? for sinners also do even the same. And if ye lend *to them* of whom ye hope to receive, what thank have ye? for sinners also lend to sinners, to receive as much again. But love ye your enemies, and do good, and lend, hoping for nothing again; and your reward shall be great, and ye shall be the children of the Highest: for he is kind unto he unthankful and *to* the evil. Be ye therefore merciful, as your Father also is merciful. Judge not, and ye shall not be judged: condemn not, and ye shall not be condemned: forgive, and ye shall be forgiven: give, and it shall be given unto you: good measure, pressed down and shaken together, and running over, shall men give

* Luke, chap. vi, 20.

into your bosom. For with the same measure that ye mete withal, it shall be measured to you again. And he spake a parable unto them, Can the blind lead the blind? shall they not both fall into the ditch? The disciple is not above his master: but every one that is perfect shall be as his master. And why beholdest thou the mote that is in thy brother's eye, but perceivest not the beam that is in thine own eye? Either how canst thou say to thy brother, Brother, let me pull out the mote that is in thine eye, when thou thyself beholdest not the beam that is in thine own eye? Thou hypocrite! cast out first the beam out of thine own eye, and then shalt thou see clearly to pull out the mote that is in thy brother's eye. For a good tree bringeth not forth corrupt fruit; neither doth a corrupt tree bring forth good fruit. For every tree is known by *its* own fruit: for of thorns men do not gather figs, nor of a bramble bush gather they grapes. A good man out of the good treasure of his heart bringeth forth that which is good; and an evil man of the evil treasure of his heart bringeth forth that which is evil: for of the abundance of the heart his mouth speaketh. And why call ye me, Lord, Lord, and do not the things which I say? Whosoever cometh to me, and heareth my saying, and doeth them, I will shew you to whom he is like: he is like a man which built an house, and digged deep, and laid the foundation on a rock; and when the flood arose, the stream beat vehemently upon that house, and could not shake it; for it was founded upon a rock. But he that heareth, and doeth not, is like a man that without a foundation built an house upon the earth; against which the stream did beat vehemently, and immediately it fell; and the ruin of that house was great

* And one of the Pharisees desired him that he would eat with him. And he went into the Pharisee's house, and sat down to meat. And behold, a woman in the city, which was a sinner, when she knew that *Jesus* sat at meat in the Pharisee's house, brought an alabaster box of ointment, and stood at his feet behind *him* weeping, and began to wash his feet with tears, and did wipe *them* with the hairs of her head, and kissed his feet, and anointed *them* with the ointment. Now when the Pharisee which had bidden him saw *it*, he spake within himself, saying, This man, if he were a prophet, would have known who and what manner of woman *this is* that toucheth him; for she is a sinner. And Jesus answering

* Luke, chap. vii, 36.

said unto him, Simon, I have somewhat to say unto thee. And he saith, Master, say on. There was a certain creditor which had two debtors: the one owed five hundred pence, and the other fifty; and when they had nothing to pay, he frankly forgave them both. Tell me therefore, which of them will love him most? Simon answered and said, I suppose that *he*, to whom he forgave most. And he said unto him, Thou hast rightly judged. And he turned to the woman, and said unto Simon, Seest thou this woman? I entered into thine house, thou gavest me no water for my feet: but she hath washed my feet with tears, and wiped *them* with the hairs of her head. Thou gavest me no kiss: but this woman, since the time I came in, hath not ceased to kiss my feet. My head with oil thou didst not anoint; but this woman hath anointed my feet with ointment. Wherefore I say unto thee, Her sins, which are many, are forgiven; for she loved much: but to whom little is forgiven, *the same* loveth little. And he said unto her, Thy sins are forgiven. And they that sat at meat with him began to say within themselves, Who is this that forgiveth sins also? And he said to the woman, Thy faith hath saved thee; go in peace.

* And when much people were gathered together, and were come to him out of every city, he spake by a parable: A sower went out to sow his seed: and as he sowed, some fell by the way side; and it was trodden down, and the fowls of the air devoured it. And some fell upon a rock; and all soon as it was sprung up, it withered away, because it lacked moisture. And some fell among thorns; and the thorns sprang up with it and chocked it. And other fell on good ground, and sprang up, and bare fruit an hundredfold. And when he had said these things, he cried, he that hath ears to hear, let him hear. And his disciples asked him, saying, What might this parable be? And he said, Unto you it is given to know the mysteries of the kingdom of God: but to others in parables; that seeing they might not see, and hearing they might not understand. Now the parable is this: The seed is the word of God. Those by the way side are they that hear; then cometh the devil and taketh away the word out of their hearts, lest they should believe and be saved. They on the rock *are they*, which, when they hear, receive the word with joy; and these have no root, which for a while believe, and in time of temptation fall away. And that which fell among thorns are they, which

* Luke, chap. viii, 4.

when they have heard, go forth, and are chocked with cares and riches and pleasures of *this* life, and bring no fruit to perfection. But that on the good ground are they, which in an honest and good heart, having heard the word, keep *it*, and bring forth fruit, with patience. No man, when he hath lighted a candle, covereth it with a vessel, or putteth *it* under a bed; but setteth *it* on a candlestick, that they which enter in may see the light. For nothing is secret, that shall not be made manifest; neither *any thing* hid, that shall not be known and come abroad. Take heed therefore how ye hear: for whosoever hath, to him shall be given and whosoever hath not, from him shall be taken even that which he seemeth to have.

Then came to him *his* mother and his brethren, and could not come at him for the press. And it was told him *by certain*, which said, Thy mother and thy brethren stand without, desiring to see thee. And he answered and said unto them, My mother and my brethren are these which hear the word of God, and do it.

* Then there arose a reasoning among them, which of them should be greatest. And Jesus, perceiving the thought of their heart, took a child, and set him by him, and said unto them, Whosoever shall receive this child, in my name, receiveth me: and whosoever shall receive me receiveth him that sent me: for he that is least among you all, the same shall be great. And John answered and said, Master, we saw one casting out devils in thy name; and we forbad him, because he followeth not with us. And Jesus said unto him, Forbid *him* not: for he that is not against us is for us.

And it came to pass, when the time was come that he should be received up, he steadfastly set his face to go to Jerusalem, and sent messengers before his face: and they went, and entered into a village of the Samaritans, to make ready for him, and they did not receive him, because his face was as though he would go to Jerusalem. And when his disciples James and John saw *this*, they said, Lord, wilt thou that we command fire to come down from heaven, and consume them, even as Elias did? but he turned and rebuked them, and said, Ye know not what manner of spirit ye are of. For the Son of man is not come to destroy men's lives, but to save *them*. And they went to another village.

And it came to pass, that, as they went in the way, a certain *man* said unto him, Lord, I will follow thee whithersoever thou goest. And

* Luke, chap. ix, 46.

Jesus said unto him, Foxes have holes, and birds of the air have nests; but the Son of man hath not where to lay *his* head. And he said unto another, Follow me. But he said, Lord, suffer me first to go and bury my father. Jesus said unto him let the dead bury their dead: but go thou and preach the kingdom of God. And another also said, Lord, I will follow thee; but let me first go bid them farewell which are at home at my house. And Jesus said unto him, No man having put his hand to the plough and looking back, is fit for the kingdom of God.

* After these things the Lord appointed other seventy also, and sent them two and two before his face into every city and place, whither he himself would come. Therefore said he unto them, The harvest truly *is* great, but the labourers *are* few: pray ye therefore the Lord of the harvest, that he would send forth labourers into his harvest. Go your ways: behold, I send you forth as lambs among wolves. Carry neither purse, nor scrip, nor shoes: and salute no man by the way. And into whatsoever house ye enter, first say, Peace *be* to this house. And if the Son of peace be there, your peace rest upon it: if not, it shall turn to you again. And in the same house remain, eating and drinking such things as they give: for the labourer is worthy of his hire. Go not from house to house. And into whatsoever city ye enter, and they receive you, eat such things as are set before you: and heal the sick that are therein, and say unto them, The kingdom of God is come nigh unto you. But into whatsoever city ye enter, and they receive you not, go your ways out into the streets of the same, and say, Even the very dust of your city, which cleaveth on us, we do wipe off against you: notwithstanding, be ye sure of this, that the kingdom of God is come nigh unto you. But I say unto you, that it shall be more tolerable in that day for Sodom, than for that city. Woe unto thee, Chorazin! woe unto thee, Bethsaida! for if the mighty works had been done in Tyre and Sidon, which have been done in you, they had a great while ago repented, sitting in sackcloth and ashes. But it shall be more tolerable for Tyre and Sidon at the judgment, than for you. And thou Capernaum, which art exalted to heaven, shall be thrust down to hell. He that heareth you heareth me; and he that despiseth you despiseth me; and he that despiseth me despiseth *him* that sent me.

* Luke, chap. x, 1.

* And, behold, a certain lawyer stood up, and tempted him, saying, Master, what shall I do to inherit eternal life? He said unto him, What is written in the law? how readest thou? And he answering said, Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy strength, and with all thy mind; and thy neighbour as thyself. And he said unto him, Thou hast answered right: this do, and thou shalt live. But he, willing to justify himself, said unto Jesus, And who is my neighbour? And Jesus answering said, A certain *man* went down from Jerusalem to Jericho, and fell among thieves, which stripped him of his raiment, and wounded *him*, and departed, leaving *him* half dead. And by chance there came down a certain priest that way: and when he saw him, he passed by on the other side. And likewise a Levite, when he was at the place, came and looked on *him*, and passed by on the other side. But a certain Samaritan, as he journeyed, came where he was: and when he saw him, he had compassion *on him*, and went to him and bound up his wounds, pouring in oil and wine, and set him on his own beast, and brought him to an inn, and took care of him. And on the morrow when he departed, he took out two pence, and gave *them* to the host, and said unto him, Take care of him; and whatsoever thou spendest more, when I come again I will repay thee. Which now of these three thinkest thou, was neighbour unto him that fell among the theives? And he said, He that shewed mercy on him. Then said Jesus unto him, Go, and do thou likewise.

† Now it came to pass, as they went, that he entered into a certain village: and a certain woman named Martha, received him into her house. And she had a sister called Mary, which also sat at Jesus' feet, and heard his word. But Martha was cumbered about much serving, and came to him, and said, Lord, dost thou not care that my sister hath left me to serve alone? bid her therefore that she help me. And Jesus answered and said unto her, Martha, Martha, thou art carefu and troubled about many things: but one thing is needful: and Mary hath chosen that good part, which shall not be taken away from her.

‡ And it came to pass, that, as he was praying in a certain place, when he ceased, one of his disciples said unto him, Lord, teach us to pray, as John also taught his disciples. And he said unto them, When ye pray, say, Our Faher which art in heaven, hallowed be thy

* Luke, chap. x, 25. † Luke, chap. x, 38. ‡ Luke, chap. xi, 1.

name: Thy kingdom come: Thy will be done, as in heaven, so in earth. Give us day by day our daily bread: and forgive us our sins, for we also forgive every one that is indebted to us: and lead us not into temptation: but deliver us from evil. And he said unto them, Which of you shall have a friend, and shall go unto him at midnight, and say unto him, Friend, lend me three loaves; for a friend of mine in his journey is come to me, and I have nothing to set before him? And he from within shall answer and say, Trouble me not: the door is now shut, and my children are with me in bed; I cannot rise and give thee. I say unto you, Though he will not rise and give him because he is his friend, yet because of his importunity he will rise and give him as many as he needeth. And I say unto you, Ask, and it shall be given you; seek and ye shall find; knock, and it shall be opened unto you. For every one that asketh receiveth; and he that seeketh findeth; and to him that knocketh it shall be opened. If a son shall ask bread of any of you that is a father, will he give him a stone? or if *he ask* a fish, will he for a fish give him a serpent? or if he shall ask an egg, will he offer him a scorpion? If ye then, being evil, know how to give good gifts unto your children, how much more shall *your* heavenly Father give the Holy Spirit to them that ask him?

* And it came to pass, as he spake these things, a certain woman of the company lifted up her voice, and said unto him, Blessed *is* the womb that bare thee, and the paps which thou hast sucked. But he said, Yea, rather blessed *are* they that hear the word of God, and keep it.

† No man, when he hath lighted a candle, putteth *it* in a secret place, neither under a bushel, but on a candlestick, that they which come in may see the light. The light of the body is the eye: therefore when thine eye is single, thy whole body also is full of light; but when *thine eye* is evil, thy body also is full of darkness. Take heed therefore that the light which is in thee be not darkness. If thy whole body therefore *be* full of light, having no part dark, the whole shall be full of light, as when the bright shining of a candle doth give thee light.

And as he spake, a certain Pharisee besought him to dine with him: and he went in, and sat down to meat. And when the Pharisee saw *it*, he marvelled that he had not first washed before dinner.

* Luke, chap. xi, 27 † Luke, chap. xi, 33.

And the Lord said unto him, Now do ye Pharisees make clean the outside of the cup and the platter; but your inward part is full of ravening and wickedness. Ye fools, did not he that made that which is without, make that which is within also? But rather give alms of such things as ye have; and, behold, all things are clean unto you. But woe unto you, Pharisees for ye tithe mint and rue and all manner of herbs, and pass over judgment and the love of God: these ought ye to have done, and not to leave the other undone. Woe unto you, Pharisees! for ye love the uppermost seats in the synagogues, and greetings in the markets. Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye are as graves which appear not, and the men that walk over *them* are not aware *of them.* Then answered one of the lawyers, and said unto him, Master thus saying, thou reproachest us also. And he said, Woe unto you also, *ye* lawyers! For ye lade men with burdens grievous to be borne, and ye yourselves touch not the burdens with one of your fingers. Woe unto you! for ye build the sepulchres of the prophets, and your fathers killed them. Truly ye bear witness that ye allow the deeds of your fathers: for they indeed killed them, and ye build their sepulchres. Therefore also said the wisdom of God, I will send them prophets and apostles, and *some* of them they shall slay and persecute: that the blood of all the prophets, which was shed from the foundation of the world, may be required of this generation; from the blood of Abel unto the blood of Zacharias, which perished between the altar and the temple: verily I say unto you, it shall be required of this generation. Woe unto you, lawyers! for ye have taken away the key of knowledge: ye entered not in yourselves, and them that were entering in, ye hindered.

[*] In the meantime when there were gathered together an innumerable multitude of people, insomuch that they trode one upon another, he began to say unto his disciples first of all, Beware ye of the leaven of the Pharisees, which is hypocrisy. For there is nothing covered, that shall not be revealed; neither hid, that shall not be known. Therefore whatsoever ye have spoken in darkness shall be heard in the light; and that which ye have spoken in the ear in closets, shall be proclaimed upon the house-tops. And I say unto you my friends, Be not afraid of them that kill the body and after that have no more that they can do. But I will forewarn you

[*] Luke, chap. xii, 1.

whom ye shall fear: fear him, which after he hath killed hath power to cast into hell; yea, I say unto you, fear him. Are not five sparrows sold for two farthings? and not one of them is forgotten before God: but even the very hairs of your head are all numbered. Fear not therefore: ye are of more value than many sparrows. Also I say unto you, Whosoever shall confess me before men, him shall the Son of man also confess before the angels of God: but he that denieth me before men shall be denied before the angels of God. And whosoever shall speak a word against the Son of man, it shall be forgiven him: but unto him that blasphemeth against the Holy Ghost it shall not be forgiven. And when they bring you unto the synagogues, and *unto* magistrates, and powers, take ye no thought how or what thing ye shall answer or what ye shall say: for the Holy Ghost shall teach you in the same hour what ye ought to say. And one of the company said unto him, Master, speak to my brother, that he divide the inheritance with me. And he said unto him, Man, who made me a judge or a divider over you? And he said unto them, Take heed, and beware of covetousness: for a man's life consisteth not in the abundance of the things which he possesseth. And he spake a parable unto them, saying, The ground of a certain rich man brought forth plentifully: and he thought within himself, saying, What shall I do, because I have no room where to bestow my fruits? And he said, This will I do: I will pull down my barns, and build greater; and there will I bestow all my fruits and my goods. And I will say to my soul, Soul thou hast much goods laid up for many years; take thine ease, eat, drink, *and* be merry. But God said unto him, *Thou* fool! this night thy soul shall be required of thee: then whose shall those things be, which thou hast provided? So *is* he that layeth up treasure for himself, and is not rich toward God. And he said unto his disciples, Therefore I say unto you, Take no thought for your life, what ye shall eat; neither for the body, what ye shall put on. The life is more than meat, and the body *is more* than raiment. Consider the ravens: for they neither sow nor reap; which neither have storehouse nor barn; and God feedeth them. How much more are ye better than the fowls? And which of you with taking thought can add to his stature one cubit? If ye then be not able to do that thing which is least, why take ye thought for the rest? Consider the lilies, how they grow: they toil not, they spin not; and yet I say unto you, That Solomon in all his glory was not arrayed like one of

these. If then God so clothe the grass, which is to-day in the field, and to-morrow is cast into the oven, how much more *will he clothe* you, O ye of little faith? And seek not ye what ye shall eat, or what ye shall drink, neither be ye of doubtful mind. For all these things do the nations of the world seek after: and your Father knoweth that ye have need of these things. But rather seek ye the kingdom of God; and all these things shall be added unto you. Fear not, little flock; for it is your Father's good pleasure to give you the kingdom. Sell that ye have, and give alms; provide yourselves bags which wax not old, a treasure in the heavens that faileth not, where no thief approacheth, neither moth corrupteth. For where your treasure is, there will your heart be also. Let your loins be girded about, and *your* lights burning; and ye yourselves like unto men that wait for their lord, when he will return from the wedding; that when he cometh and knocketh, they may open unto him immediately. Blessed *are* those servants, whom the lord when he cometh shall find watching: verily I say unto you, That he shall gird himself, and make them to sit down to meat, and will come forth and serve them. And if he shall come in the second watch, or come in the third watch, and find *them* so, blessed are those servants. And this know, that, if the good man of the house had known what hour the thief would come he would have watched, and not have suffered his house to be broken through. Be ye therefore ready also: for the Son of man cometh at an hour when ye think not. Then Peter said unto him, Lord, speakest thou this parable unto us, or even to all? And the Lord said, Who then is that faithful and wise steward, whom *his* lord shall make ruler over his household, to give *them their* portion of meat in due season? Blessed *is* that servant, whom his lord when he cometh shall find *so* doing. Of a truth I say unto you, that he will make him ruler over all that he hath. But and if that servant say in his heart, My lord delayeth his coming; and shall begin to beat the men-servants and maidens, and to eat and drink, and to be drunken; the lord of that servant will come in a day when he looketh not for *him*, and at an hour when he is not aware, and will cut him in sunder, and will appoint him his portion with the unbelievers. And that servant, which knew his lord's will, and prepared not *himself*, neither did according to his will, shall be beaten with many *stripes*. But he that knew not, and did commit things worthy of stripes, shall be beaten with few *stripes*. For unto whomsoever much is given, of

him shall be much required: and to whom men have committed much, of him they will ask the more. I am come to send fire on the earth; and what will I, if it be already kindled? But I have a baptism to be baptized with; and how am I straitened till it be accomplished! Suppose ye that I am come to give peace on earth? I tell you, Nay; but rather division: for from henceforth there shall be five in one house divided, three against two, and two against three. The father shall be divided against the son, and the son against the father; the mother against the daughter and the daughter against the mother; the mother-in-law against her daughter-in-law and the daughter-in-law against her mother-in-law. And he said also to the people, When ye see a cloud rise out of the west, straightway ye say, There cometh a shower: and so it is. And when *ye see* the south wind blow, ye say, There will be heat; and it cometh to pass. Ye hypocrites! ye can discern the face of the sky and of the earth; but how is it that ye do not discern this time? Yea, and why even of yourselves judge ye not what is right? When thou goest with thine adversary to the magistrate, *as thou art* in the way, give diligence that thou mayest be delivered from him; lest he hale thee to the judge, and the judge deliver thee to the officer, and the officer cast thee into prison. I tell thee, thou shalt not depart thence, till thou hast paid the very last mite.

* There were present at that season some that told him of the Galilæans, whose blood Pilate had mingled with their sacrifices. And Jesus answering said unto them, Suppose ye that these Galilæans were sinners above all the Galilæans, because they suffered such things? I tell you, Nay: but, except ye repent, ye shall all likewise perish. Or those eighteen, upon whom the tower in Siloam fell, and slew them, think ye that they were sinners above all men that dwelt in Jerusalem? I tell you Nay: but, except ye repent ye shall all likewise perish. He spake also this parable: A certain *man* had a fig tree planted in his vineyard; and he came and sought fruit thereon, and found none. Then said he unto the dresser of his vineyard, Behold, these three years I come seeking fruit on this fig tree, and find none: cut it down: why cumbereth it the ground? And he answering said unto him, Lord, let it alone this year also, till I shall dig about it, and dung *it*: and if it bear fruit, *well*: and if not, *then* after that thou shalt cut it down.

* Luke, chap. xiii, 1.

*And the ruler of the synagogue answered with indignation, because that Jesus had healed on the sabbath day, and said unto the people, There are six days in which men ought to work: in them therefore come and be healed, and not on the sabbath day. The Lord then answered him, and said, *Thou* hypocrite! doth not each one of you on the sabbath loose his ox or his ass from the stall and lead him away to watering? And ought not this woman, being a daughter of Abraham, whom Satan hath bound, lo, these eighteen years, to be loosed from this bond on the sabbath day? And when he had said these things, all his adversaries were ashamed: and all the people rejoiced for all the glorious things that were done by him.

Then said he, Unto what is the kingdom of God like? and whereunto shall I resemble it? It is like a grain of mustard seed, which a man took, and cast into his garden? and it grew, and waxed a great tree; and the fowls of the air lodged in the branches of it. And again he said, Whereunto shall I liken the kingdom of God? It is like leaven, which a woman took and hid, in three measures of meal, till the whole was leavened.

Then said one unto him, Lord, are there few that be saved? And he said unto them, Strive to enter in at the strait gate: for many, I say unto you, will seek to enter in and shall not be able. When once the master of the house is risen up, and hath shut to the door, and ye begin to stand without, and to knock at the door, saying, Lord, Lord, open unto us; and he shall answer and say unto you, I know you not whence ye are: then shall ye begin to say, We have eaten and drunk in thy presence, and thou hast taught in our streets. But he shall say, I tell you, I know you not whence ye are: depart from me, all *ye* workers of iniquity. There shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth, when ye shall see Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, and all the prophets, in the kingdom of God, and you *yourselves* thrust out. And they shall come from the east and *from* the west, and from the north, and *from* the south, and shall sit down in the kingdom of God. And, behold, there are last which shall be first, and there are first which shall be last.

The same day there came certain of the Pharisees saying unto him, Get thee out, and depart hence: for Herod will kill thee. And he said unto them, Go ye, and tell that fox, Behold, I cast out

*Luke, chap. xiii, 14.

devils, and I do cures to-day and to-morrow, and the third day I shall be perfected. Nevertheless I must walk to-day, and to-morrow, and the day following: for it cannot be that a prophet perish out of Jerusalem. O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, which killest the prophets, and stonest them that are sent unto thee; how often would I have gathered thy children together, as a hen *doth gather* her brood under *her* wings, and ye would not! Behold, your house is left unto you desolate: and verily I say unto you, Ye shall not see me, until *the time* come when ye shall say, Blessed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord

*And it came to pass, as he went into the house of one of the chief Pharisees to eat bread on the sabbath day that they watched him. And, Behold, there was a certain man before him which had the dropsy And Jesus answering spake unto the lawyers and Pharisees, saying, Is it lawful to heal on the sabbath day? And they held their peace. And he took him, and healed him, and let him go; and answered them, saying, Which of you shall have an ass or an ox fallen into a pit, and will not straightway pull him out on the sabbath day? And they could not answer him again to these things. And he put forth a parable to those which were bidden, when he marked how they chose out the chief rooms; saying unto them, When thou art bidden of any *man* to wedding, sit not down in the highest room; lest a more honourable man than thou be bidden of him; and he that bade thee and him come and say to thee, Give this man place; and thou begin with shame to take the lowest room. But when thou art bidden, go and sit down in the lowest room; that when he that bade thee cometh, he may say unto thee, Friend, go up higher: then shalt thou have worship in the presence of them that sit at meat with thee. For whosoever exalteth himself shall be abased; and he that humbleth himself shall be exalted. Then said he also to him that bade him, When thou makest a dinner or a supper, call not thy friends, nor thy brethren, neither thy kinsmen, nor *thy* rich neighbours; lest they also bid thee again, and a recompense be made thee. But when thou makest a feast, call the poor, the maimed, the lame, the blind: and thou shalt be blessed; for they cannot recompense thee: for thou shalt be recompensed at the resurrection of the just. And when one of them that sat at meat with him heard these things, he said unto him, Blessed is he that shall eat bread in the kingdom of

* Luke, chap. xiv., 1.

God. Then said he unto him, A certain man made a great supper, and bade many: and sent his servant at supper time to say to them that were bidden, Come; for all things are now ready. And they all with one *consent* began to make excuse. The first said unto him, I have bought a piece of ground, and I must needs go and see it: I pray thee have me excused. And another said, I have bought five yoke of oxen, and I go to prove them: I pray thee have me excused. And another said, I have married a wife and therefore I cannot come. So that servant came, and shewed his lord these things. Then the master of the house being angry said to his servant, Go out quickly into the streets and lanes of the city, and bring in hither the poor, and the maimed, and the halt, and the blind. And the servant said, Lord it is done as thou hast commanded, and yet there is room. And the lord, said unto the servant, Go out into the highways and hedges, and compel *them* to come in, that my house may be filled. For I say unto you, That none of those men which were bidden shall taste of my supper.

And there went great multitudes with him: and he turned, and said unto them, If any *man* come to me and hate not his father, and mother, and wife, and children, and brethren, and sisters, yea, and his own life also, he cannot be my disciple. And whosoever doth not bear his cross, and come after me, cannot be my disciple. For which of you, intending to build a tower, sitteth not down first, and counteth the cost, whether he have *sufficient* to finish *it*? Lest haply, after he hath laid the foundation, and is not able to finish it, all that behold *it* begin to mock him, saying, This man began to build, and was not able to finish. Or what king, going to make war against another king, sitteth not down first, and consulteth whether he be able with ten thousand to meet him that cometh against him with twenty thousand? Or else, while the other is yet a great way off, he sendeth an ambassage, and desireth conditions of peace. So likewise, whosoever he be of you that forsaketh not all that he hath, he cannot be my disciple. Salt *is* good: but if the salt have lost its savour, wherewith shall it be seasoned? It is neither fit for the land, nor yet for the dunghill; *but* men cast it out. He that hath ears to hear, let him hear.

*Then drew near unto him all the publicans and sinners for to hear him. And the Pharisees and scribes murmured, saying, This man

* Luke, chap. xv, 1.

receiveth sinners and eateth with them. And he spake this parable unto them, saying, What man of you, having an hundred sheep, if he lose one of them, doth not leave the ninety and nine in the wilderness, and go after that which is lost, until he find it? And when he hath found *it*, he layeth *it* on his shoulders, rejoicing. And when he cometh home, he calleth together, *his* friends and neighbours, saying unto them, Rejoice with me; for I have found my sheep which was lost. I say unto you, that likewise joy shall be in heaven over one sinner that repenteth, more than over ninety and nine just persons, which need no repentance. Either what woman having ten pieces of silver, if she lose one piece, doth not light a candle, and sweep the house, and seek diligently till she find *it*? And when she hath found *it*, she calleth *her* friends and her neighbours together, saying, Rejoice with me; for I have found the piece which I had lost. Likewise, I say unto you, There is joy in the presence of the angels of God over one sinner that repenteth. And he said, A certain man had two sons: and the younger of them said to *his* father, Father, give me the portion of goods that falleth to *me*. And he divided unto them *his* living. And not many days after, the younger son gathered all together, and took his journey into a far country, and there wasted his substance with riotous living. And when he had spent all, there arose a mighty famine in that land; and he began to be in want. And he went and joined himself to a citizen of that country: and he sent him into his fields to feed swine. And he would fain have filled his belly with the husks that the swine did eat: and no man gave unto him. And when he came to himself, he said, How many hired servants of my father's have bread enough and to spare, and I perish with hunger! I will arise and go to my father, and will say unto him, Father, I have sinned against heaven, and before thee, and am no more worthy to be called thy son: make me as one of thy hired servants. And he arose, and came to his father. But when he was yet a great way off, his father saw him, and had compassion, and ran and fell on his neck, and kissed him. And the son said unto him, Father, I have sinned against heaven, and in thy sight, and am no more worthy to be called thy son. But the father said to his servants Bring forth the best robe, and put *it* on him; and put a ring on his hand and shoes on *his* feet: and bring hither the fatted calf, and kill *it*; and let us eat, and be merry: for this my son was dead, and is alive

again; he was lost, and is found. And hey began to be merry Now his elder son was in the field: and as he came and drew nigh to the house, he heard music and dancing. And he called one of the servants, and asked what these things meant. And he said unto him, Thy brother is come; and thy father hath killed the fatted calf, because he hath received him safe and sound. And he was angry, and would not go in: therefore came his father out, and intreated him. And he answering said to *his* father, Lo, these many years do I serve thee, neither transgressed I at any time thy commandment: and yet thou never gavest me a kid, that I might make merry with my friends: but as soon as this thy son was come, which hath devoured thy living with harlots, thou hast killed for him the fatted calf. And he said unto him, Son, thou art ever with me, and all that I have is thine. It was meet that we should make merry, and be glad: for this thy brother was dead, and is alive again; and was lost, and is found.

* And he said also unto his disciples, There was a certain rich man, which had a steward; and the same was accused unto him that he had wasted his goods. And he called him and said unto him, How is it that I hear this of thee? give an account of thy stewardship; for thou mayest be no longer steward. Then the steward said within himself, What shall I do? for my lord taketh away from me the stewardship: I cannot dig; to beg I am ashamed. I am resolved what to do, that when I am put out of the stewardship, they may receive me into their houses. So he called every one of his lord's debtors *unto him*, and said unto the first, How much owest thou unto my lord? And he said, An hundred measures of oil. And he said unto him, Take thy bill and sit down quickly, and write fifty. Then said he to another, And how much owest thou? And he said, An hundred measures of wheat. And he said unto him, Take thy bill, and write fourscore. And the lord commended the unjust steward, because he had done wisely: for the children of this world are in their generation wiser than the children of light. And I said unto you, Make to yourselves friends of the mammon of unrighteousness; that, when ye fail, they may receive you into everlasting habitations. He that is faithful in that which is least is faithful also in much: and he that is unjust in the least is unjust also in much. If therefore ye have not been faithful in the unrighteous mammon, who will commit

*Luke, chap. xvi, 1.

to your trust the true *riches*? And if ye have not been faithful in that which is another man's, who shall give you that which is your own? No servant can serve two masters: for either he will hate the one, and love the other; or else he will hold to the one, and despise the other. Ye cannot serve God and mammon. And the Pharisees also, who were covetous, heard all these things and they derided him. And he said unto them, Ye are they which justify yourselves before men; but God knoweth your hearts: for that which is highly esteemed among men, is abomination in the sight of God. The law and the prophets *were* until John since that time the kingdom of God is preached, and every man presseth into it. And it is easier for heaven and earth to pass, than one tittle of the law to fail. Whosoever putteth away his wife, and marrieth another, committeth adultery: and whosoever marrieth her that is put away from *her* husband, committeth adultery. There was a certain rich man, which was clothed in purple and fine linen, and fared sumptuously every day: and there was a certain beggar named Lazarus, which was laid at his gate, full of sores, and desiring to be fed with the crumbs which fell from the rich man's table: moreover the dogs came and licked his sores. And it came to pass, that beggar died, and was carried by the angels into Abraham's bosom: the rich man also died, and was buried; and in hell he lift up his eyes, being in torments, and seeth Abraham afar off, and Lazarus in his bosom. And he cried and said, Father Abraham, have mercy on me, and send Lazarus, that he may dip the tip of his finger in water, and cool my tongue; for I am tormented in this flame. But Abraham said, Son, remember that thou in thy life-time receivedst thy good things, and likewise Lazarus evil things: but now he is comforted, and thou art tormented. And beside all this between us and you there is a great gulf fixed: so that they which would pass from hence to you cannot; neither can they pass to us, that *would come* from thence. Then he said, I pray thee therefore, father, that thou wouldest send him to my father's house: for I have five brethren that he may testify unto them, lest they also come into this place of torment. Abraham saith unto him, They have Moses and the prophets let them hear them. And he said, Nay, father Abraham: but if one went unto them from the dead, they will repent. And he said unto him, If they hear not Moses and the prophets, neither will they be persuaded, though one rose from the dead.

* Then said he unto the disciples, It is impossible but that offences will come but woe *unto him*, through whom they come! It were better for him that a millstone were hanged about his neck, and he cast into the sea than that he should offend one of these little ones. Take heed to yourselves: if thy brother trespass against thee, rebuke him; and if he repent, forgive him. And if he trespass against thee seven times in a day, and seven times in a day turn again to thee, saying, I repent; thou shalt forgive him. And the apostles said unto the Lord, Increase our faith. And the Lord said, If ye had faith as a grain of mustard seed, ye might say unto this sycamine tree, Be thou plucked up by the root, and be thou planted in the sea: and it should obey you. But which of you, having a servant plowing or feeding cattle, will say unto him by and by, when he is come from the field, Go and sit down to meat? And will not rather say unto him, Make ready wherewith I may sup, and gird thyself, and serve me, till I have eaten and drunken; and afterward thou shalt eat and drink? Doth he thank that servant because he did the things that were commanded him? I trow not. So likewise ye, when ye shall have done all those things which are commanded you, say, We are unprofitable servants: we have done that which was our duty to do.

† And he spake a parable unto them *to this end*, that men ought always to pray, and not to faint; saying, There was in a city a judge, which feared not God, neither regarded man: and there was a widow in that city; and she came unto him, saying, Avenge me of mine adversary. And he would not for a while: but afterward he said within himself, Though I fear not God, nor regard man; yet because this widow troubleth me, I will avenge her, lest by her continued coming she weary me. And the Lord said, Hear what the unjust judge saith. And shall not God avenge his own elect, which cry day and night unto him, though he bear long with them? I tell you that he will avenge them speedily. Nevertheless when the Son of man cometh shall he find faith on the earth?

And he spake this parable unto certain which trusted in themselves that they were righteous, and despised others: Two men went up into the temple to pray; the one a Pharisee, and the other a publican. The Pharisee stood and prayed thus with himself: God I thank thee that I am not as other men *are*, extortioners, unjust, adulterers, or even as this publican. I fast twice in the week, I give

* Luke, chap. xvii, 1. † Luke, chap. xviii, 1.

tithes of all that I possess. And the publican, standing afar off, would not lift up so much as *his* eyes unto heaven, but smote upon his breast, saying God be merciful to me a sinner. I tell you, this man went down to his house justified *rather* than the other: for every one that exalteth himself shall be abased; and he that humbleth himself shall be exalted.

And they brought unto him also infants, that he would touch them: but when *his* disciples saw *it*, they rebuked them. But Jesus called them *unto him*, and said, Suffer little children to come unto me, and forbid them not: for of such is the kingdom of God. Verily I say unto you, Whosoever shall not receive the kingdom of God as a little child, shall in no wise enter therein.

And a certain ruler asked him, saying, Good Master, what shall I do to inherit eternal life? And Jesus said unto him, Why callest thou me good? none *is* good save one, *that is*, God. Thou knowest the commandments, Do not commit adultery, Do not kill, Do not steal, Do not bear false witness, Honour thy father and thy mother. And he said, All these have I kept from my youth up. Now when Jesus heard these things, he said unto him, Yet lackest thou one thing; sell all that thou hast, and distribute unto the poor, and thou shalt have treasure in heaven: and come, follow me. And when he heard this, he was very sorrowful: for he was very rich. And when Jesus saw that he was very sorrowful, he said, How hardly shall they that have riches enter into the kingdom of God! For it is easier for a camel to go through a needle's eye, than for a rich man to enter into the kingdom of God. And they that heard *it* said, Who then can be saved? And he said, The things which are impossible with men are possible with God. Then Peter said, Lo, we have left all, and followed thee. And he said unto them, Verily I say unto you, There is no man that hath left house, or parents, or brethren, or wife, or children, for the kingdom of God's sake, who shall not receive manifold more in his present time, and in the world to come life everlasting.

* He said therefore, A certain nobleman went into a far country to receive for himself a kingdom, and to return. And he called his ten servants, and delivered them ten pounds and said unto them, Occupy till I come. But his citizens hated him, and sent a message after him, saying, We will not have this man to reign over us. And

* Luke, chap. xix., 12

it came to pass, that when he was returned, having received the kingdom, then he commanded these servants to be called unto him, to whom he had given the money, that he might know how much every man had gained by trading. Then came the first, saying, Lord thy pound hath gained ten pounds. And he said unto him, Well, thou good servant: because thou hast been faithful in a very little, have thou authority over ten cities. And the second came, saying, Lord, thy pound hath gained five pounds. And he said likewise to him, Be thou also over five cities. And another came saying, Lord behold *here is* thy pound, which I have kept laid up in a napkin: for I feared thee, because thou art an austere man: thou takest up that thou layedst not down and reapest that thou didst not sow. And he saith unto him, Out of thine own mouth will I judge thee, *thou* wicked servant. Thou knewest that I was an austere man, taking up that I laid not down, and reaping that I did not sow: wherefore then gavest not thou my money into the bank, that at my coming I might have required mine own with usury? And he said unto them that stood by, Take from him the pound, and give it to him that hath ten pounds. (And they said unto him, Lord, he hath ten pounds. For I say unto you, That unto every one which hath shall be given; and from him that hath not, even that he hath shall be taken away from him. But those mine enemies, which would not that I should reign over them, bring hither, and slay *them* before me.

* And the chief priests and the scribes the same hour sought to lay hands on him; and they feared the people: for they perceived that he had spoken this parable against them. And they watched *him*, and sent forth spies, which should feign themselves just men, that they might take hold of his words, that so they might deliver him unto the power and authority of the governor. And they asked him, saying, Master we know that thou sayest and teachest rightly, neither acceptest thou the person *of any*, but teachest the way of God truly: Is it lawful for us to give tribute unto Cæsar, or no? But he perceived their craftiness, and said unto them, Why tempt ye me? Shew me a penny. Whose image and superscription hath it? They answered and said, Cæsar's. And he said unto them, Render therefore unto Cæsar the things which be Cæsar's, and unto God the things which be God's. And they could not take hold of his words before

* Luke, chap. xx, 19.

the people: and they marvelled at his answer, and held their peace. Then came to *him* certain of the Sadducees, which deny that there is any resurrection: and they asked him, saying, Master, Moses wrote unto us, If any man's brother die, having a wife and he die without children, that his brother should take his wife, and raise up seed unto his brother. There were therefore seven brethren, and the first took a wife, and died without children. And the second took her to wife, and he died childless. And the third took her; and in like manner the seven also: and they left no children and died. Last of all the woman died also. Therefore, in the resurrection whose wife of them is she? for seven had her to wife. And Jesus answering said unto them, The children of this world marry, and are given in marriage: but they which shall be accounted worthy to obtain that world, and the resurrection from the dead, neither marry, nor are given in marriage: neither can they die any more: for they are equal unto the angels; and are the children of God, being the children of the resurrection. Now that the dead are raised, even Moses shewed at the bush when he calleth the Lord the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob. For he is not a God of the dead, but of the living: for all live unto him. Then certain of the scribes answering said, Master, thou hast well said.

* And he looked up, and saw the rich men casting their gifts into the treasury. And he saw also a certain poor widow casting in thither two mites. And he said, Of a truth I say unto you, that this poor widow hath cast in more than they all: for all these have of their abundance cast in unto the offerings of God: but she of her penury hath cast in all the living that she had.

† There was a man of the Pharisees, named Nicodemus, a ruler of the Jews: the same came to Jesus by night, and said unto him, Rabbi, we know that thou art a teacher come from God: for no man can do these miracles that thou doest, except God be with him. Jesus answered and said unto him, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born again, he cannot see the kingdom of God. Nicodemus saith unto him, How can a man be born when he is old? can he enter the second time into his mother's womb, and be born? Jesus answered, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born of water and *of* the Spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God. That which is born of the flesh is flesh; and that which is born of

* Luke, chap. xxi, 1. † John, chap. iii, 1.

the Spirit is spirit. Marvel not that I said unto thee, Ye must be born again. The wind bloweth where it listeth, and thou hearest the sound thereof, but canst not tell whence it cometh, and whither it goeth: so is every one that is born of the Spirit. Nicodemus answered and said unto him, How can these things be? Jesus answered and said unto him, Art thou a master of Israel, and knowest not these things? Verily, verily, I say unto thee, We speak that we do know, and testify that we have seen; and ye receive not our witness. If I have told you earthly things, and ye believe not, how shall ye believe if I tell you *of* heavenly things? And no man hath ascended up to heaven, but he that came down from heaven, *even* the Son of man which is in heaven. And as Moses lifted up the serpent in the wilderness, even so must the Son of man be lifted up: that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have eternal life. For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life. For God sent not his Son into the world to condemn the world; but that the world through him might be saved. He that believeth on him is not condemned: but he that believeth not is condemned already, because he hath not believed in the name of the only begotten Son of God. And this is the condemnation, that light is come into the world, and men loved darkness rather than light, because their deeds were evil. For every one that doeth evil hateth the light, neither cometh to the light, lest his deeds should be reproved. But he that doeth truth cometh to the light, that his deeds may be made manifest, that they are wrought in God.

* But the hour cometh, and now is, when the true worshippers shall worship the Father in spirit and in truth: for the Father seeketh such to worship him. God *is* a Spirit: and they that worship him must worship *him* in spirit and in truth.

† Labour not for the meat which perisheth, but for that meat which endureth unto everlasting life, which the Son of man shall give unto you: for him hath God the Father sealed.

‡ And the scribes and Pharisees brought unto him a woman taken in adultery; and when they had set her in the midst, they say unto him Master, this woman was taken in adultery, in the very act. Now Moses in the law commanded us, that such should be stoned: but what sayest thou? This they said, tempting him, that

* John, chap. iv. 23. † John, chap. vi. 27. ‡ John, chap. viii. 3

tney might have to accuse him. But Jesus stooped down, and with his finger wrote on the ground, *as though he heard them not.* So when they continued asking him, he lifted up himself, and said unto them, He that is without sin among you let him first cast a stone at her. And again he stooped down, and wrote on the ground. And they which heard *it* being convicted by *their own* conscience, went out one by one, beginning at the eldest, *even* unto the last: and Jesus was left alone, and the woman standing in the midst. When Jesus had lifted up himself, and saw none but the woman, he said unto her, Woman, where are those thine accusers? hath no man condemned thee? She said, No man, Lord. And Jesus said unto her, Neither do I condemn thee: go, and sin no more.

* And Jesus said, For judgment I am come into this world, that they which see not might see; and that they which see might be made blind. And *some* of the Pharisees which were with him heard these words, and said unto him, Are we blind also? Jesus said unto them, If ye were blind, ye should have no sin: but now ye say, We see; therefore your sin remaineth.

† I am the true vine, and my Father is the husbandman. Every branch in me that beareth not fruit he taketh away. and every *branch* that beareth fruit, he purgeth it, that it may bring forth more fruit. Now ye are clean through the word which I have spoken unto you. Abide in me, and I in you. As the branch cannot bear fruit of itself except it abide in the vine; no more can ye, except ye abide in me. I am the vine, ye *are* the branches: he that abideth in me, and I i him, the same bringeth forth much fruit: for without me ye can d nothing. If a man abide not in me, he is cast forth as a branch, and is withered; and men gather them, and cast *them* into the fire, and they are burned. If ye abide in me, and my words abide in you, ye shall ask what ye will, and it shall be done unto you. Herein is my Father glorified, that ye bear much fruit; so shall ye be my disciple. As the Father h th loved me, so have I loved you: continue ye in my love. If ye keep my commandments, ye shall abide in my love; even as I have kept my father's commandments, and abide in his love. These things have I spoken unto you, that my joy might remain in you, and *that* your joy might be full. This is my commandment, That ye love one another, as I have loved you. Greater love hath no man than this, that a man lay down his life for his friends. Ye are

* John, chap. ix, 39. † John, chap. xv, 1.

my friends, if ye do whatsoever I command you. Henceforth I call you not servants; for the servant knoweth not what his lord doeth: but I have called you friends, for all things that I have heard of my Father I have made known unto you. Ye have not chosen me, but I have chosen you, and ordained you, that ye should go and bring forth fruit, and *that* your fruits should remain: that whatsoever ye shall ask of the Father in my name, he may give it you. These things I command you, that ye love one another.

AN APPEAL

TO

THE CHRISTIAN PUBLIC,

IN DEFENCE OF

"THE PRECEPTS OF JESUS."

BY

A FRIEND TO TRUTH

PRINTED AT CALCUTTA:
1820.

AN APPEAL, &c., &c.

In perusing the twentieth number of "The Friend of India," I felt as much surprised as disappointed at some remarks made in that magazine by a gentleman under the signature of "A Christian Missionary," on a late publication entitled, "The Precepts of Jesus;" and also at some observations of a similar nature on the same subject by the Editor of that publication. Before however I attempt to inquire into the ground upon which their objections to the work in question are founded, I humbly beg to appeal to the public against the unchristianlike, as well as uncivil manner in which the Editor has adduced his objections to the compilation, by introducing personality, and applying the term of *heathen* to the Compiler. I say unchristianlike manner, because the Editor, by making use of the term heathen, has, I presume, violated truth, charity, and liberality, which are essential to Christianity in every sense of the word. For there are only two methods by which the character of the Compiler as a heathen, or as a believer in one true and living God, can be satisfactorily inferred. The most reasonable of the two modes is to confine such inquiries to the evidence contained in the subject of review, no mention of the name of the compiler being made in the publication itself. Another mode, which is obviously inapplicable in such discussions, is to guess at the real author, and to infer his opinions from a knowledge of his education or other circumstances. With respect to the first source of evidence, the following expressions of the Compiler's sentiments are found in the Introduction: "A notion of the existence of a supreme, superintending Power, the Author and Preserver of the harmonious system, who has organized and who regulates such an infinity of celestial and terrestrial objects, and a due estimation of that Law which teaches that man should do to others as he would wish to be done by, reconcile us to human nature, &c." "This simple code of religion and morality, (meaning the Precepts of Jesus,) is so admirably calculated to elevate men's ideas to high and liberal notions of one God, &c.," "so well fitted to regulate the conduct of the human race in the discharge of their

various duties to God, to themselves, and to society," and "so conformable to the dictates of human reason, divine revelation, &c." These expressions are calculated, in my humble opinion, to convince every mind not biassed by prejudice, that the Compiler believed not only in one God, whose nature and essence is beyond human comprehension, but in the truths revealed in the Christian system. I should hope neither the Reviewer nor the Editor can be justified in inferring the heathenism of the Compiler, from the facts of his extracting and publishing the moral doctrines of the New Testament, under the title of "*A Guide to peace and happiness*"—his styling the Precepts of Jesus, a code of religion and morality—his believing God to be the Author and Preserver of the universe—or his considering those sayings as adapted to regulate the conduct of the whole human race in the discharge of all the duties required of them.

Neither, I trust, can his separating the moral sayings of Christ from the mysterious dogmas and historical parts of the New Testament, under the impression, that these are liable to the doubts and disputes of free-thinkers and anti-christians with which this part of the world is unfortunately filled; nor his opinion that this simple code of morality would be more likely to attract the notice and respect of such men, and to guide their mind into the paths of peace and happiness, than if presented to them in conjunction with other matter against which their education has taught them to revolt; justly subject him, in the opinion of the most orthodox Christians, to the epithet applied to him by the Editor. If they do, I cannot see how the same condemnation can be spared to numerous publications of extracts from the Old and the New Testaments, made and sent forth by several Christian authors, under various designations and for different purposes.

With respect to the latter mode of seeking evidence, however unjustified the Editor may be in coming to such a conclusion, he is safe in ascribing the collection of these Precepts to Rammohun Roy; who, although he was born a Brahmun, not only renounced idolatry at a very early period of his life, but published at that time a treatise in Arabic and Persian against that system; and no sooner acquired a tolerable knowledge of English, than he made his desertion of idol worship known to the Christian world by his English publication—a renunciation that, I am sorry to say, brought severe difficulties upon him, by exciting the displeasure of his parents, and subjecting him to the dislike of his near, as well as distant relations, and to the hatred

of nearly all his countrymen for several years. I therefore presume that among his declared enemies, who are aware of those facts, no one who has the least pretension to truth, would venture to apply the designation of heathen to him; but I am sure, that the respect he entertains for the very name of Christianity, which the Editor of the "Friend of India," seems to profess will restrain him from retorting on that Editor, although there may be differences of opinion between them that might be thought sufficient to justify the use towards the Editor of a term no less offensive. The Editor perhaps may consider himself justified by numerous precedents amongst the several partisans of different Christian sects in applying the name of Heathen to one who takes the Precepts of Jesus as his principal guide in matters of religious and civil duties; as Roman Catholics bestow the appellation of heretics or infidels on all classes of Protestants, and Protestants do not spare the title of idolaters to Roman Catholics; Trinitarians deny the name of Christian to Unitarians, while the latter retort by stigmatizing the worshippers of the Son of man as Pagans who adore a created and dependent Being. Very different conduct is inculcated in the Precepts of Jesus to John, when complaining of one who performed cures in the name of Jesus, yet refused to follow the Apostles:—he gave a rebuke, saying, "He that is not against us is on our part." *Mark*, ch. ix, ver. 40. The Compiler, having obviously in view at least one object in common with the Reviewer and Editor, that of procuring respect for the Precepts of Christ, might have reasonably expected more charity from professed teachers of his doctrines.

The Compiler of the Precepts of Jesus will, however, I doubt not, give preference to the guidance of those Precepts, which justify no retaliation even upon enemies, to the hasty suggestions of human passions and the example of the Editor of the "Friend of India."

2. The Editor of the "Friend of India," and the respected Reviewer, both not only disapprove absolutely the plan adopted by the Compiler in separating the moral doctrines of the Books of the New Testament ascribed to the four Evangelists from the mysteries and historical matters therein contained, but even blame him as an injurer of the cause of truth; and for such disapprobation they assign several reasons:—first, The Reviewer says, the supposition of the moral sayings being sufficient for salvation, independent of the dogmas, is, (as he notes in page 26,) radically false; and that it is presumption of him (the compiler) to think himself qualified to judge

independently of the Divine Teacher, what sort of instruction is advantageous for the happiness of mankind. If indeed the Reviewer understands by the word *moral* what relates to conduct only with reference to man, it cannot apply to those Precepts of Jesus, that teach the duty of man to God; which however the Reviewer will find included in the collection of the Precepts of Jesus by the Compiler: but a slight attention to the scope of the Introduction might have convinced the Reviewer, that the sense in which the word *moral* is there used, whether rightly or otherwise, is quite general, and applies equally to our conduct in religious as in civil matters. Without attaching this meaning to the term 'moral doctrines,' the whole of the concluding sentence must appear absurd, where it is said, "This simple code is well fitted to regulate the conduct of the human race in the discharge of their various duties to God, to themselves, and to society." This assertion is corroborated and supported by a great number of passages in the treatise in question, which point out the appropriate mode of performing our duty to the Almighty Power. It is however too true to be denied, that the Compiler of those moral precepts separated them from some of the dogmas and other matters, chiefly under the supposition, that they alone were a sufficient guide to secure peace and happiness to mankind at large—a position that is entirely founded on and supported by the express authorities of Jesus of Nazareth—a denial of which would imply a total disavowal of Christianity. Some of those authorities, as found amongst these precepts, here follow: *Matthew*, ch. xxii, beginning with verse 37: '‘Jesus said unto him, Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind. 38: This is the first and great commandment. 39: And the second is like unto it, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself. 40: ON THESE TWO COMMANDMENTS HANG ALL THE LAW AND THE PROPHETS." *Mark*, ch. xii, beginning with verse 29: "And Jesus answered him, The first of all the commandments is, Hear, O Israel, The Lord our God is one Lord. 30: Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind, and with all thy strength. This is the first commandment. 31: And the second is LIKE, namely this: Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself. There is no other commandment greater than these. 32: And he said unto him, Well, Master, thou hast said the truth; for there is one God, and there is none other but he. 33: And to love him with all the heart

and with all the understanding, and with all the soul, and with all the strength, and to love his neighbour as himself, is more than all whole burnt-offerings and sacrifices. 34: And when Jesus saw that he answered discreetly, he said unto him, Thou art not far from the kingdom of God." *Matthew*, ch. vii, verse 12: 'Therefore all things whatsoever you would that men should do to you, do ye even so to them; FOR THIS IS THE LAW AND THE PROPHETS." Ch. v, 17: "Think not that I am come to destroy the Law or the Prophets; I am not come to destroy, but to fulfil." *Luke*, ch. x, beginning with verse 25: "And behold, a certain Lawyer stood up and tempted him, saying, Master, what shall I do to inherit eternal life? 26: He said unto him, What is written in the Law? How readest thou? 27: He answering said, Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy strength, and with all thy mind; and thy neighbour as thyself. 28: And he said unto him, Thou hast answered right. THIS DO and THOU SHALT LIVE." The Saviour meant of course by the words *Law* and *Prophets* all the commandments ordained by divine authority, and the Religion revealed to the Prophets and observed by them, as is evident from Jesus's declaring those commandments to afford perfect means of acquiring eternal life, and directing men to follow them accordingly. Had any other doctrine been requisite to teach men the road to peace and happiness, Jesus could not have pronounced to the Lawyer, "This do and THOU SHALT LIVE." It was the characteristic of the office of Christ to teach men, that forms and ceremonies were useless tokens of respect for God, compared with the essential proof of obedience and love towards him evinced by the practice of beneficence towards their fellow-creatures. The compiler, finding these commandments given as including all the revealed Law, and the whole system of religion adopted by the Prophets and re-established and fulfilled by Jesus himself, as the means to acquire Peace and Happiness, was desirous of giving more full publicity in this country to them, and to the subsidiary moral doctrines that are introduced by the Saviour in detail. Placing also implicit confidence in the truth of his sacred commandments, to the observance of which we are directed by the same teacher, (*John*, ch. xiv, ver. 15, "If ye love me, keep my commandments." Ver. 24, "He that loveth me not, keepeth not my sayings,") the Compiler never hesitated in declaring, (page 1,) a "belief in God, and a due regard to that law, 'Do unto others as you would wish to be done by,' render our existence agreeable

to ourselves, and profitable to the rest of mankind." It may now be left to the public to judge, whether or not the charge of arrogance and presumption which the Reviewer has imputed to the Compiler, under the idea that he preferred his own judgment to that of the Saviour, be justly applicable to him.

3. The respected Reviewer argues in page 26, that there are two important points, a knowledge of which is not to be acquired by following the moral precepts of Christ, but which are esaential to the attainment of true peace of mind; they being entirely founded (as he alleges) upon the dogmas and histories, viz. how to obtain, 1st, the forgiveness of sins and the favour of God; and 2ndly, strength to overcome human passions, and to keep the commandments of God. These precepts separated from the mysterious dogmas and historical records appear, on the contrary, to the Compiler to contain not only the essence of all that is necessary to instruct mankind in their civil duties, but also the best and only means of obtaining the forgiveness of our sins, the favour of God, and strength to overcome our passions, and to keep his commandments. I therefore extract from the same compilation, a few passages of that greatest of all Prophets who was sent to call sinners to repentance; a due attention to which will, I hope, satisfy the respected Reviewer on those two points. *Luke*, ch. xiii, ver. 3: "Except ye repent, ye shall all likewise perish." Ch. xv, ver. 7, 10: "I say unto you, that likewise joy shall be in heaven over one sinner that repenteth, more than over ninety and nine persons who need no repentance I say unto you, there is joy in the presence of the angels of God over one sinner that repenteth." *Matthew*, ch. ix, 13: "I am not come to call the righte as, but sinners to repentance." Ch. xviii, ver. 11: "For the Son of man is come to save that which was lost." *Luke*, ch v, ver. 32: "I o me not to call the righteous but sinners to repentance." Which sayings are confirmatory of what is taught in *Ezekiel*, ch. xviii ver. 30: "Repent and turn yourselves from all your transgressions, so iniquity shall not be your ruin." See also the parable of the prodigal son, where the mercy of God is illustrated by the example of a father pardoning the transgressions of his repenting son. Numerous passages of the Old and the New Testament to the same effect, which might fill a volume, distinctly promise us that the forgiveness of God and the favour of his divine majesty may be obtained by sincere repentance, as required of sinners by the Redeemer.

As to the second point, that is: How to be enabled to overcome our passions, and keep the commandments of God:—we are not left unprovided for in that respect, as our gracious Saviour has promised every strength and power as necessary consequences of earnest prayer and hearty desire. *Matthew*, ch. vii, ver. 7, and *Luke*, ch. xi, ver. 9, 13: "Ask and it shall be given you, seek and ye shall find, knock and it shall be opened unto you." "If ye then, being evil, know how to give good gifts unto your children, how much more shall your Father which is in heaven give good things to them that ask him." *Luke*, ch. xi, ver. 9: "I say unto you, Ask and it shall be given you." After a due attention to these and to numerous passages of the same effect, no one who believes in the divine message of Jesus of Nazareth, or even in the truth of his doctrine only can be at all at a loss to find adequate means of attaining those two ends, justly considered to be most essential by the Reviewer.

4. The Reviewer imputes to the Compiler, error in exalting the value of the moral doctrines above that of the historical facts and dogmas contained in the New Testament. This imputation, I humbly maintain, can be of no weight or force against the authority of Jesus himself, as quoted in the above texts; which clearly shew, that there is no other means of attaining eternal life except the performance of our duties towards God in obeying his commandments. That the aim and object of all the commandments of God is to teach us our duty towards our fellow-creatures may be gathered from a hundred passages of Scripture, of which perhaps the following may suffice. *Matthew*, ch. xxv, ver. 31-46: "When the Son of man shall come in his glory, and all the holy angels with him, then shall he sit upon the throne of his glory. And before him shall be gathered all nations: and he shall separate them one from another, as a shepherd divideth his sheep from the goats. And he shall set the sheep on his right hand, but the goats on the left. Then shall the king say unto them on his right hand, Come, ye blessed of my Father, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world. For I was an hungred, and ye gave me meat: I was thirsty, and ye gave me drink: I was a stranger, and ye took me in: naked and ye clothed me: I was sick, and ye visited me: I was in prison, and ye came unto me. Then shall the righteous answer him, saying, Lord, when saw we thee an hungred, and fed thee? or thirsty, and gave thee drink? When saw we thee a stranger, and took thee in?

or naked, and clothed thee? Or when saw we thee sick, or in prison, and came unto thee? And the king shall answer and say unto them, Verily I say unto you, Inasmuch as ye have done it unto one of the least of these my brethren, ye have done it unto me. Then shall he say unto them also on the left hand, depart from me, ye cursed, into everlasting fire, prepared for the devil and his angels. For I was an hungred, and ye gave me no meat: I was thirsty, and ye gave me no drink: I was a stranger, and ye took me not in: naked, and ye clothed me not: sick, and in prison, and ye visited me not. Then shall they also answer him asying, Lord, when saw we thee an hungred, or athirst, or a stranger, or naked, or sick or in prison, and did not minister unto thee? Then shall he answer them, saying, Verily I say unto you, Inasmuch as ye did it not to one of the least of these, ye did it not to me. And these shall go away into everlasting punishment: but the righteous into life eternal." In this description of the day of judgment it is clearly announced, that the merciful Father of the universe accepts as manifestation of love towards himself, every act of charity and beneficence performed towards his creatures: (See text already quoted, *Matthew*, ch. vii, ver. 12.) And apparently to counteract by anticipation the erroneous idea that such conduct might be dispensed with, and reliance placed on a mere dogmatical knowledge of God, or of the Saviour, the following declaration seems to have been uttered. *Matthew*, ch. vii, ver. 21-26: "Not every one that saith unto me, Lord! Lord! shall enter into the kingdom of heaven, but he that doeth the will of my Father who is in heaven. Many will say unto me in that day, Lord! Lord! have we not prophesied in thy name; in thy name have cast out devils; and in thy name done many wonderful works? And then will I profess unto them I never knew you; depart from me ye that work iniquity. Therefore whosoever heareth *these sayings* of mine, and doeth them, I will liken him unto a wise man, who built his house upon a rock. And every one that heareth *these sayings* of mine, and doeth them not, shall be likened unto a foolish man, who built his house upon the sand." *Matthew* ch. xii, 50; "Whosoever shall do the will of my Father who is in heaven, the same is my brother, and sister, and mother." *Luke*, ch. viii, ver. 21; "My mother and my brethren are these which hear the word of God and do it." Ch. xi, ver. 27, 28: "Blessed is the womb (said a certain woman to Jesus) that bare thee, and the paps which thou hast sucked: but he said, Yea, rather

blessed are they that hear the word of God, and keep it." *John* ch. xv, ver. 10:" If ye keep my commandments, ye shall abide in my love; even as I have kept my Father's commandments, and abide in his love." What then are THOSE SAYINGS, the obedience to which is so absolutely commanded as indispensable and all-sufficient to those who desire to inherit eternal life? They are not other than the blessed and benign moral doctrines taught in the sermon on the mount, (contained in the 5th, 6th, and 7th chapters of Matthew,) which include therefore every duty of man, and all that is necessary to salvation; and they expressly exclude mere profession or belief, from those circumstances which God graciously admits as giving a title to eternal happiness. Neither in this, nor in any other part of the New Testament can we find a commandment similarly enjoining a knowledge of any of the mysteries or historical relations contained in those books. It is besides plainly stated, that but a very small portion of the works of Jesus have been handed down to us by the Evangelists. John says at the conclusion of his gospel, ch. xxi, ver. 25, "There are also many other things which Jesus did, the which if they should be written every one, I suppose the world itself could not contain the books that should be written." On the other hand we cannot doubt, that the whole spirit of his doctrines has been faithfully and fully recorded. The reason of this appears obvious:— miracles must have had a powerful effect on the minds of those who witnessed them, and who without some such evidence were disposed to question the authority of the teacher of those doctrines. *John*, ch x, ver. 25: "The works that I do in my Father's name, they bear witness of me" Vers. 37, 38: "If I do not the works of my Father, believe me not. But if I do, though ye believe not me, believe the works." Had his doctrines of themselves made their due impression, the aid of miracles would not have been requisite, nor had recourse to In this country, the bare report of such miracles could have given no support to the weight of the doctrines; for as the Compiler has stated in his Introduction, miracles infinitely more wonderful are related of their gods and saints, on authorities that the Hindoos must deem superior to those of the Apostles.

We are taught by revelation, as well as education, to ascribe to the Deity the perfection of those attributes which are esteemed excellent amongst mankind. And according to those ideas it must surely appear more consistent with the justice of the Sovereign Ruler,

that he should admit to mercy those of his subjects who, acknowledging his authority, have endeavoured to obey his laws; or shewn contrition, when they have fallen short of their duty and love; than that he should select for favour those whose claims rest on having acquired particular ideas of his nature and of the origin of his Son, and of what afflictions that Son may have suffered in behalf of his people. If the Reviewer and Editor will continue to resist both authority and common sense, I must be content to take leave of them with the following words, (*Luke*, ch. xvi, ver. 31:) "And he said unto him, If they hear not Moses and the Prophets, neither will they be persuaded though one rose from the dead."

5. The Reviewer observes (in page 24) with every mark of disapprobation, that the Compiler has intimated in the Introduction, that the dogmatical and historical matters are rather calculated to do injury. The Compiler could not certainly overlook the daily occurrences and obvious facts which led him to remark (in the introduction,) that "historical and some other passages are liable to the doubts and disputes of freethinkers and anti-christians, especially miraculous relations which are much less wonderful than the fabricated tales handed down to the natives of Asia:" and to prove what the Compiler stated, I humbly entreat any one to refer to the numerous volumes written by persons unattached to any of the established Churches, against the miracles, the history, and some of the dogmas of Christianity. It has been the different interpretations of the dogmas that have given rise to such keen disputes amongst the followers of Jesus. They have not only destroyed harmony and union between one sect of Christians and another, and continue to do so; but in past times have even caused continual wars and frequent bloodshed to rage amongst them, more dreadfully than between Christians and infidels. A slight reference to the histories of Christian countries, will, I trust, afford to my readers entire conviction upon this head. Besides, the Compiler, residing in the same spot where European missionary gentlemen and others for a period of upwards of twenty years have been, with a view to promote Christianity, distributing in vain amongst the natives numberless copies of the complete Bible, written in different languages, could not be altogether ignorant of the causes of their disappointment. He, however, never doubted their zeal for the promulgation of Christianity, nor the accuracy of their statement with regard to immense sums of money being annually

expended in preparing vast numbers of copies of the Scriptures; but he has seen with regret, that they have completely counteracted their own benevolent efforts, by introducing all the dogmas and mysteries taught in Christian churches to people by no means prepared to receive them; and that they have been so incautious and inconsiderate in their attempts to enlighten the natives of India, as to address the instructions to them in the same way as if they were reasoning with persons brought up in a Christian country, with those dogmatical notions imbibed from their infancy. The consequence has been, that the natives in general, instead of benefiting by the perusal of the Bible, copies of which they always receive gratuitously, exchange them very often for blank paper; and generally use several of the dogmatical terms in their native language as a mark of slight in an irreverent manner, the mention of which is repugnant to my feelings. Sabat, an eminently learned but grossly unprincipled Arab, whom our divines supposed that they had converted to Christianity, and whom they of course instructed in all the dogmas and doctrines, wrote a few years ago a treatise in Arabic against those very dogmas, and printed himself and published several hundred copies of this work; and another Musalman, of the name of Ena'et Ahmud, a man of respectable family, who is still alive, speedily returned to Muhammadanism from Christianity, pleading that he had not been able to reconcile to his understanding certain dogmas which were imparted to him. It has been owing to their beginning with the introduction of mysterious dogmas, and of relations that at first sight appear incredible, that notwithstanding every exertion on the part of our divines, I am not aware that we can find a single respectable Musalman or Hindoo, who was not in want of the common comforts of life, once glorified with the truth of Christianity, constantly adhering to it Of the few hundred natives who have been nominally converted to Christianity, and who have been generally of the most ignorant class there is ground to suspect that the greater number have been allured to change their faith by other attractions than by a conviction of the truth and reasonableness of those dogmas: as we find nearly all of them are employed or fed by their spiritual teachers, and in case of neglect are apt to manifest a rebellious spirit;—a circumstance which is well-known to the Compiler from several local facts, as well as from the following occurrence. About three years ago, the Compiler, on his visit to an English gentleman, who is still residing in the

vicinity of Calcutta, saw a great number of Christian converts with a petition, which they intended to present to the highest Ecclesiastical authority, stating that their teachers, through false promises of advancement, had induced them to give up their ancient religion. The Compiler felt indignant at their presumption, and suggested to the gentleman as a friend, the propriety of not countenancing a set of men, who, from their own declaration, seemed so unprincipled. The missionaries themselves are as well aware as the Compiler, that those very dogmas are the points which the people always select as the most proper for attack, both in their oral and written controversies with Christian teachers; all of which, if required, the Compiler is prepared to prove by the most unquestionable testimony.

Under these circumstances the Compiler published such sayings of Christ, as he thought intelligible to all, conveying conviction with them, and best calculated to lead mankind to universal love and harmony; not dwelling upon those matters, an observance of which is not absolutely ordained, and the interpretations of which, instead of introducing peace and happiness, have generally given rise to disputes and controversies. The Compiler has had no local influence nor power to promote any one's interest, nor has he situations to give away, nor yet has he friends and colleagues to recommend others to their patronage. Humble as he is, he has therefore adopted those measures which he thought most judicious to spread the truth in an acceptable manner; but I am sorry to observe, that he has unfortunately and unexpectedly met with opposition from those whom he considered the last persons likely to oppose him on this subject. From what has already been advanced, the Reviewer may perceive the reason why the passages extracted by the Compiler from the Gospel of St. John should be comparatively few. It is from this source, that the most difficult to be comprehended of the dogmas of the Christian religion have been principally drawn; and on the foundation of passages of that writer, the interpretation of which is still a matter of keen discussion amongst the most learned and most pious scholars in Christendom, is erected the mysterious doctrine of three Gods in one Godhead, the origin of Muhammadanism, and the stumbling-block to the conversion of the more enlightened amongst the Hindoos.

To impress more strongly on the minds of those for whom this compilation was intended, the doctrines taught by Jesus, the Compiler thought the varied repetition of them by different but con-

curring reporters highly advantageous, as showing clearly that those doctrines were neither misrepresented nor misconceived by any of those Evangelists.

6. Nor is the conduct of the Compiler in selecting certain passages of the Scriptures for certain purposes singular; for we see very often extracts from the Bible, published by the learned men of every sect of Christians, with a view to the maintenance of particular doctrines. Christian churches have selected passages from the Bible, which they conceive particularly excellent, and well adapted for the constant perusal and study of the people of their respective churches; and besides, it is the continual practice of every Christian teacher to choose from the whole Scriptures such texts as he deems most important, for the purposes of illustrating them, and impressing them on the minds of his hearers. Nor will those teachers, if questioned as to their object in such selection, hesitate to assign as their motive the very reason adopted by the Compiler as his—the superior importance of the parts so selected. Whether or not he has erred in his judgment on that point, must be determined by those who will candidly peruse and consider the arguments already advanced on the subject, always bearing in mind the lesson practically taught by the Saviour himself, of adapting his instructions to the susceptibility and capacity of his hearers. *John*, ch. xvi, ver. 12: "I have yet many things to say unto you, but ye cannot bear them now."

Hindustan is a country, of which nearly three-fifths of the inhabitants are Hindoos, and two-fifths Musalmans. Although the professors of neither of these religions are possessed of such accomplishments as are enjoyed by Europeans in general, yet the latter portion are well-known to be firmly devoted to a belief in one God, which has been instilled into their minds from their infancy. The former (I mean the Hindoos) are, with a few exceptions, immersed in gross idolatry, and in belief of the most extravagant description respecting futurity, antiquity, and the miracles of their deities and saints, as handed down to them and recorded in their ancient books. Weighing these circumstances, and anxious, from his long experience of religious controversy with natives, to avoid further disputation with them, the Compiler selected those Precepts of Jesus, the obedience to which he believed most peculiarly required of a Christian, and such as could by no means tend, in doctrine, to excite the religious horror of Muhammadáns, or the scoffs of Hindoos. What

benefit or peace of mind can we bestow upon a Musalman, who is an entire stranger to the Christian world, by communicating to him without preparatory instruction all the peculiar dogmas of Christianity; such as those contained in verse 1st, chap. 1st of *St. John*: "In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God"? Would they not find themselves at a loss to reconcile this dogma to their unprepared understandings, viz. A is B and A is also with B? Although the interpretations given us of such texts by truly learned and candid divines be ever so satisfactory, yet to those that are strangers to these explanations they cannot be intelligible; nor can it be expected from the order of things, that each can happily find at hand an able interpreter to whom he can have recourse for an explanation, whenever he may be involved in difficulties or doubts. But as a great number of missionary gentlemen may perhaps view the matter in a different light, and join the Editor of the Friend of India, in accusing the Compiler as an injurer of the cause of truth, I doubt not that with a view to avoid every possibility of such imputation, and to prevent others from attributing their ill success to his interference with their duties, he would gladly abstain from publishing again on the same subject, if he could see in past experience anything to justify hopes of their success. From what I have already stated, I hope no one will infer that I feel ill-disposed towards the missionary establishments in this country. This is far from being the case. I pray for their augmentation, and that their members may remain in the happy enjoyment of life in a climate so generally inimical to European constitutions: for in proportion to the increase of their number, sobriety, moderation, temperance, and good behaviour have been diffused among their neighbours as the necessary consequences of their company, conversation, and good example.

7. The Reviewer charges the compiler with inconsistency, (p. 27,) because he has termed the Precepts collected by him, a code of Religion and Morality, while, as the Reviewer supposes, they form only a code of morality and not of religion. It is already explained in paragraph 2nd, that the Compiler has introduced those Precepts of Jesus under the denomination of the moral sayings of the New Testament, taking the word moral in its wide sense, as including our conduct to God, to each other, and to ourselves; and to avoid the least possibility of misunderstanding the term, he has carefully particularized the

sense in which he accepted that word by the latter sentence, "This simple code of Religion and Morality, (meaning by the former, those precepts which treat of our duty to God, and by the latter, such as relate to our duties to mankind, and to ourselves,) is so admirably calculated to elevate men's ideas to high and liberal notions of one God, &c.," "and is also so well fitted to regulate the conduct of the human race in the discharge of their various duties to God, to themselves, and to society, &c." In conformity to the design thus expressed, he has collected all the sayings that have a tendency to those ends. The Compiler, however, observes with regret, that neither this language nor this fact, has afforded to the Reviewer satisfactory evidence of his intention nor sufficed to save him from the unexpected imputation of inconsistency.

The Reviewer again (page 29) charges the Compiler with inconsistency, in having introduced some doctrinal passages into his compilation. In reply to which I again entreat the attention of the respected Reviewer to that passage in the Introduction, in which the Compiler states the motives that have led him to exclude certain parts of the gospels from his publication. He there states, that it is on account of these passages being such as were the ordinary foundation of the arguments of the opponents of Christianity, or the sources of the interminable controversies that have led to heart-burnings and even bloodshed amongst Christians, that they were not included in his selection; and they were omitted the more readily, as he considered them not essential to religion. But such dogmas, or doctrinal and other passages as are not exposed to those objections, and are not unfamiliar to the minds of those for whose benefit the compilation was intended, are generally included in conformity with the avowed plan of the work—particularly such as seem calculated to direct our love and obedience to the beneficient Author of the universe, and to him whom he graciously sent to deliver those Precepts of Religion and Morality, whose tendency is to promote universal peace and harmony.

8. In objecting to the assertion made by the Compiler in the Introduction as to a belief in the existence of God prevailing generally, the respected Reviewer advances three arguments:—1st, That millions of people believe in a plurality of Gods. 2ndly, That the majority of those enlightened persons who deny the truth of the Jewish and Christian Revelation are atheists. 3rdly, That the very system of the Vedanta, which denies to God his moral attributes, is a refined

and disguised atheism. I certainly admit that a great number of men and even men of profound learning and extensive abilities, are, owing to their early education, literally sunk in polytheism, an absurd and irrational system of religion. But the admission of a plurality of Gods does not amount to the denial of Godhead. A man, for instance, cannot be accused of having no notion of mankind, because he is proved to believe in the existence of a plurality of individuals. The Reviewer ought therefore to have confined himself to the remark, the truth of which will be readily admitted, that there are millions of people ignorant of the unity of God, the only doctrine consistent with reason and revelation. The astonishing eagerness of the learned amongst those, whose practice and language are polytheistical, to prefer their claim to be considered as Monotheists, is a strong evidence of the consistency of the system of Monotheism with reason. Debased and despicable as is the belief of the Hindoos in three hundred and thirty millions of gods, they pretend to reconcile this persuasion with the doctrine of the unity of God; alleging that the three hundred and thirty millions of gods, whom they enumerate, are subordinate agents, assuming various offices in preserving the harmony of the universe under one Godhead, as innumerable rays issue from one sun. I am at a loss to trace the origin of his second argument, imputing atheism to the majority of those who deny the divinity of the Jewish and Christian Revelation. For notwithstanding my acquaintance with several Europeans and Asiatics who doubt the possibility of Revelation, I have never met with one, to the best of my recollection, maintaining atheism, however widely they might differ from the Reviewer and the Compiler in a great many points of belief relating to the Deity. The Reviewer perhaps may have met with some unhappy freethinkers, who have professed doubts respecting the existence of a supreme superintending Power—a circumstance which has probably induced him to form this opinion; but such rare instances can have no force to set aside the credit of what the Compiler affirms, that a belief in God *prevails generally*. Neither can I conscienciously coincide with the respected Reviewer in his imputing atheism to the Vedanta system, under the supposition of its denying moral attributes to God; nor can I help lamenting that religious prejudice should influence the Reviewer so much, as to make him apply the term of atheist towards a sect or to individuals who look up to the God of nature through his wonderful

works alone; for the Vedanta, in common with the Jewish and Christian Scriptures, from the impossibility of forming more exalted conceptions, constantly ascribes to God the perfection of those moral attributes which are considered among the human species excellent and sublime. To prove this I quote one passage from each of the four Upanishads of the Vedanta, which have already been translated into English. Mundaka, Chap. 1, section 1: "By him who knows all things collectively and distinctly, whose knowledge and will are the only means of his actions, Brahma, name, and form, and all that vegetates, are produced." Katha, chap. 5: "God is eternal, among all the perishable universe; and is the source of sensation among all animate existences; and he alone assigns to so many objects their respective purposes." Kenopanishad: "In a battle between the celestial gods and the demons, God enabled the former to defeat the latter." And Ishopanishad: "He overspreads all creatures, is merely spirit without the form either of a minute body or of an extended one, which is liable to impression or organization. He is pure, perfect, omniscient, the Ruler of the intellect, omnipresent, and the self-existent. He has from eternity been assigning to all creatures their respective purposes." For further evidence, if required, I beg to refer the Reviewer to the rest of the original Vedanta works that may be found in the College Library and in the missionary stores of books. It is, however, very true, that the Vedanta declares very often its total ignorance of the real nature and attributes of God. Kenopanishad, ver. 3: "Hence no vision can approach him, no language can describe him, no intellectual power can compass or determine him: we know nothing how the Supreme Being should be explained," &c. It also represents God sometimes in a manner familiar to the understanding of the vulgar. Mundaka, ch. vii. sect. 1: "Heaven is his head, and the sun and moon are his eyes; space is his ears," &c. But such declarations are not peculiar to the Vedanta doctrines, as these are found frequently in the Sacred Scriptures. *Job* xxxvi. 26: "Behold God is great, and we know him not." Ch. xxxvii. 23: "Touching the Almighty we cannot find him out his greatness is unsearchable." The Scriptures also represent God in the same familiar and figurative manner as is found in the Vedanta. God is affirmed to have made man in his own image, after his own likeness. The angels always behold God's face in heaven. In the Old Testament, as well as in the New, God is represented

as repenting of his works, as being moved with anger, vexation, grief, joy, love and hate: as moving from place to place; having arms with hands and fingers; a head, with face, mouth, tongue, eyes, nose, ears; a heart, bowels, back, thighs, legs; as seeing, being seen, speaking, and hearing, slumbering, waking, &c. No one capable of sound reasoning can for a moment imagine that these or any other descriptions of God are intended to convey literal notions of the unsearchable, incomprehensible Being.

May God render religion destructive of differences and dislike between man and man, and conducive to the peace and Union of mankind.—Amen.

SECOND APPEAL

TO

THE CHRISTIAN PUBLIC,

IN DEFENCE OF

"THE PRECEPTS OF JESUS."

BY

RAMMOHUN ROY

ADVERTISEMENT.

THE contents of the following Treatise are included under these two propositions:—1st, That the Precepts of Jesus, which teach that love to God is manifested in beneficence towards our fellow-creatures, are a sufficient Guide to Peace and Happiness; and 2ndly, That that omnipresent God who is the only proper object of religious veneration, is one and undivided in person.

Though these doctrines, as I conceive the to be alike founded on reason and revelation, appear to me to be almost as obvious truths as any abstract axiom, yet they are opposed in fact by a very large body of writers and teachers. I must therefore leave them to be decided upon by those who will be pleased to bestow their candid and liberal attention on the arguments I have used in the succeeding pages;—and on their impartial judgment I confidently rely.

SECOND APPEAL.

CHAPTER I.

General Defence of the Precepts in Question.

THE observations contained in No. I of the Quarterly Series of "The Friend of India," on the Introduction to "The Precepts of Jesus" as well as on their defence, termed "An Appeal to the Christian Public," are happily expressed in so mild and Christianlike a style, that they have not only afforded me ample consolation for the disappointment and vexation I felt from the personality conveyed in the preceding Magazines, (Nos. 20 and 23,) but have also encouraged me to pursue my researches after the fundamental principles of Christianity in a manner agreeable to my feelings, and with such respect as I should always wish to manifest for the situation and character of so worthy a person as the Editor of the Friend of India.

The Reverend Editor labours in his Review to establish two points—the truth and excellency of the miraculous relations and of the dogmas found in the scriptural writings; and, 2ndly, the insufficiency of the compiled Precepts of Jesus alone to lead to salvation, unless accompanied with the important doctrines of the Godhead of Jesus and his atonement.

As the Compiler neither in his Introduction to the Precepts of Jesus, nor in his defence of those Precepts, has expressed the least doubt as to the truth of any part of the Gospels, the arguments adduced by the learned Editor to demonstrate the truth and excellence of the authority on which they rest, are, I am inclined to think, quite superfluous, and foreign to the matter in question.

The only reason assigned by the Compiler, (in the Introduction,) for separating the Precepts from the abstruse doctrines and miraculous relations of the New Testament, are, that the former "are liable to the doubts and disputes of Freethinkers and Anti-christians. and the latter are capable at best of carrying little weight with the natives of this part of the globe, the fabricated tales handed down to them being of a more wonderful nature."

These sentiments respecting the doctrines and miracles, founded as they are upon undeniable facts, do not, I presume, convey any disavowal or doubt of their truth. Besides, in applying the term "fabricated" to the tales received by the credulous Hindoos, the Compiler clearly evinced the contemptible light in which he viewed these legends; and in stating that the miracles of the Scriptures were subject to the doubts of "Freethinkers and Anti-christians," it can never fairly be supposed that he meant himself, or any other person labouring in the promulgation of Christianity, to be included in that class.

As to the second point urged by the Reverend Editor, namely, that the compiled Precepts were not sufficient to lead to salvation, I deeply regret that the Editor should appear to have overlooked the authority of the gracious Author of this religion in the several passages cited by the Compiler in his Appeal, to prove beyond doubt the sufficiency of the Precepts in question to procure eternal life; as it is almost impossible that so numerous quotations, spreading over a great part of the Appeal could have escaped his notice. The Reverend Editor, while endeavouring to prove, that the compiled Precepts would fall short of guiding to peace and happiness, only illustrates by sacred authority the true excellency of the miracles and the doctrines of Christianity. But such illustration can have no tendency to demonstrate the position he endeavours to maintain. I am therefore under the necessity of repeating a few passages already quoted, with some others, shewing that the compiled Precepts are sufficient to conduct the human race to happiness; and I humbly entreat to know, if I be persuaded to believe in the divine origin of those passages, and in the entire veracity of their author, how I am to reconcile their authority with the position maintained by the learned Editor, as to the insufficiency of the Precepts of Jesus to guide to peace and happiness. *Matthew*, ch. xxii., beginning with ver. 37: "Jesus said unto him, Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind; this is the first and great commandment. And the second is like unto it, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself. On these two commandments hang all the law and the Prophets." *Mark*, ch. xii. beginning with ver. 29: "And Jesus answered him, The first of all the commandments is, Hear, O Israel, the Lord our God is one Lord. Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy

mind and with all thy strength: this is the first commandment. And the second is like, namely this, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself. There is no other commandment greater than these." *Matthew*, ch. vii. 12: "Therefore all things whatsoever you would that men should do to you, do you even so to them; for this is the Law and the Prophets." *Luke*, ch. x. from ver. 25: "And behold a certain lawyer stood up and tempted him, saying Master, what shall I do to inherit eternal life? He said unto him, What is written in the Law? How readest thou? He answering, said: Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy strength, and with all thy mind; and thy neigbour as thyself. And he said unto him, thou hast answered right. *This do, and thou shalt live.*" *Matthew*, ch. vii. ver. 21: "Not every one that saith unto me, Lord! Lord! shall enter into the kingdom of heaven; but he that doeth the will of my Father who is in heaven. Many will say unto me in that day, Lord! Lord! have we not prophesied in thy name; and in thy name have cast out devils; and in thy name done many wonderful works? And then will I profess unto them I never knew you; depart from me, ye that work iniquity. Therefore whosoever heareth these sayings of mine, and doeth them, I will liken him unto a wise man, who built his house upon a rock; and every one that heareth these sayings of mine, and doeth them not shall be likened unto a foolish man, who built his house upon the sand." *Luke*, ch. xi. ver. 27: "Blessed is the womb (said a certain woman to Jesus) that bare thee, and the paps which thou hast sucked: but he said, Yea rather, blessed are they that hear the word of God, and keep it." *John*, ch. xv. ver. 12: "This is my commandment, that ye love one another, as I have loved you." Ver. 17: "These things I command you, that ye love one another." Ch. xiii. ver. 34: "A new commandment I give unto you, that ye love one another; as I have loved you, that ye also love one another;" 35: "By this shall all men know that ye are my disciples, if ye have love one to another." Observing those two commandments, (*Matthew*, ch. xxii. ver. 37—39,) selected by the Saviour as a substitute for all the Law and the Prophets, and sufficient means to produce peace and happiness to mankind, the Compiler never scrupled to follow the example set forth by Jesus himself in compiling such precepts as include those two commandments, and their subsidiary moral doctrines, as a true substitute of the Gospel, without intending to depreciate the rest of the word of God. I

regret that the Reverend Editor should have disapproved of this compilation, on the ground, that "it is of importance that every compilation be given as a sample of the Sacred Writings in all their excellence and importance, and not as a substitute for the whole."

The authority of St. Paul the most exalted among primitive Christians, quoted by the Reverend Editor, (p. 89,) "If righteousness come by the law, Christ is dead in vain," is not, I presume, adequate to set aside, nor even applicable to the express authority of the Author of Christianity already quoted; as the latter includes not only the Mosaic law, to which St. Paul alludes, but both law and religion, and is evident from the following passages: "Therefore all things whatever you would that men should do to you, do you even so to them; for this is the Law and the Prophets." "On these two commandments (to love God and to love our neighbours) hang all the Law and the Prophets." Every one must admit, that the gracious Saviour meant by the words "the Law and the Prophets," all the divine commandments found in the Scriptures, obedience to which is strictly required of us by the founder of that religion. *Luke*, ch. xi. ver. 28: "Blessed are they that hear the word of God, and keep it." *John*. ch. xiv. ver. 15: "If you love me, keep my commandments." Had the manifestation of love towards God with all our strength, and towards our neighbours as ourselves, been practically impossible, as maintained by the Editor, (p. 112,) or had any other doctrines been necessary to lead to eternal life, Jesus of Nazareth, (in whose veracity, candour, and perfection, we have happily been persuaded to place implicit confidence), could not, consistently with his office as the Christ of God, have enjoined the lawyer to the obedience of those two commandments, and would not have promised him eternal life as the reward of such obedience; (*vide Luke*, ch. x. ver. 28. "*This do, and thou shalt live*;") for a man possessed of common sense and common humanity would not incite another to labour in vain by attempting what was practically impossible, nor delude him with promises of a reward upon conditions beyond his power to fulfil; much less could a Being, in whom dwelt all truth, and who was sent with a divine law to guide mankind by his preaching and example, inculcate precepts that it was impracticable to follow. Any commandment enjoining man to love God with all his heart, and all his strength, requires of us of course to direct our love towards him as the sole Father of the Universe; but does

not amount to a prohibition of the pursuits necessary for life, or to an abstinence from love towards any other object; for such love also is enjoined by the subsequent commandment. The following passages, *John*, ch. xiv. ver. 21, "He that hath my commandments and keepeth them, *he* it is that loveth me: and he that loveth me shall be loved of my Father: and I will love him, and will manifest myself to him." Ch. xv. ver. 10: "If ye keep my commandments, ye shall abide in my love." Ver. 14: "Ye are my friends, if ye do whatsoever I command you," &c., and many other passages of a similar import, exhibit clearly, that love of and adherence to Jesus, can be evinced solely by obedience to the Divine commandments. But if the observance of those commandments be treated as practically impossible, the love of Jesus and adherence to him must likewise be so considered, and Christianity altogether regarded as existing only in theory.

I appeal to the Reverend Editor himself, whether we are to set at defiance the express commandment of Jesus, under the supposition that manifestation of the love enjoined by him is practically impossible? Yet this we must do, if we are to adopt the position of the Editor, found in his Review page 111, "That the most excellent precepts, the most perfect law, can never lead to happiness and peace, unless by causing men to take refuge in the doctrine of the cross;" meaning, I presume, the doctrine of the vicarious sacrifice of Jesus on the cross, as an atonement of the sins of mankind.

As the Reverend Editor has most fairly and justly confined himself to arguments, founded on the authority of the divine Teacher himself, I should hope to be allowed to beg him to point out, in order to establish his position, even a single passage pronounced by Jesus, enjoining a refuge in such a doctrine of the cross, as all-sufficient or indispensable for salvation; so that his position, thus supported, may be placed in competition with that founded on those passages which I have quoted in the foregoing paragraph, shewing both the indispensableness and the all-sufficiency of the excellent Precepts in question to procure salvation; and may impel us to endeavour to reconcile contradictions, which would in that case be shewn to subsist between the passages, declaring the all-sufficiency of the moral precepts preached by Christ for eternal life, and those that might be found to announce the indispensableness of the doctrine of the cross for everlasting happiness.

It is however evident, that the human race are naturally so weak, and so prone to be led astray by temptations of temporary gratifica-

tions, that the best and wisest of them fall far short of manifesting a strict obedience to the divine commandments, and are constantly neglecting the duty they owe to the Creator and to their fellow-creatures; nevertheless, in reliance on numerous *promises* found in the sacred writings, we ought to entertain every hope of enjoying the blessings of pardon from the merciful Father through repentance, which is declared the only means of procuring forgiveness of our failures. I have already quoted some of these comforting passages in my Appeal, page 11; but as the Reverend Editor seems to have entirely overlooked them, and omitted to notice them in any of his publications, I deem it necessary to repeat them here with a few additions. *Ezekiel*, chap. xviii. ver. 30: "Repent and turn yourselves from all your transgressions; so iniquity shall not be your ruin." *Luke*, ch. xiii. ver. 3 "Except you repent, you shall all likewise perish." Ch. xv. ver. 7: "I say unto you, that likewise joy shall be in heaven over one sinner that repenteth, more than over ninety and nine just persons who need no repentance." *Matthew*, ch. ix. ver. 13: "I am not come to call the righteous, but sinners to repentance." Ch. iii. ver. 2: John the Baptist preached, saying, "Repent for the kingdom of heaven is at hand," and Jesus after his resurrection, lastly, directs his disciples, *Luke*, ch. xxiv. ver. 47: "That repentance and remission of sins should be preached in his name among all nations, beginning at Jerusalem," wherein he declares the remission of sins as an immediate and necessary consequence of repentance.

The foregoing authorities and remarks will, I trust, suffice with every candid reader, as my apology for persisting in the conviction that the Precepts compiled and published as a guide to peace and happiness, though deficient in respect to speculative doctrines and creeds, as well as narrative, yet contain all that is essential in practical Christianity; since they teach us the performance of our duty to God and to our fellow-creatures and the most acceptable atonement on our part to the All-merciful, when we have fallen short of that duty.

CHAPTER II.

Natural inferiority of the Son to the Father.

In endeavouring to prove what he represents as "the most abstruse, and yet the most important of doctrines, the Deity of Jesus Christ," the Reverend Editor advances seven positions—1st, That Jesus was possessed of ubiquity, an attribute peculiar to God alone. 2ndly, That he declared that a knowledge of his nature was equally incomprehensible with that of the nature of God. 3rdly, That he exercised the power of forgiving sins, the peculiar prerogative of God. 4thly, That he claimed almighty power, "in the most unequivocal manner." 5thly. That his heavenly Father had committed to him the final judgment of all who have lived since the creation. 6thly That he received worship due to God alone. 7thly, That he associated his own name with that of God the Father in the sacred rite of baptism.—The facts on which the Editor labours to establish these positions, however, seem to me, upon an impartial examination, not only unfavourable to his inference, but even confirmatory of the opposite opinion.—For, admitting for a moment, that the positions of the Editor are well founded, and that the Saviour was in possession of attributes and powers ascribed to God; have we not his own express and often repeated avowal, that all the powers he manifested, were committed to him as the Son by the Father of the Universe? And does not reason force us to infer, that a being who owes to another all his power and authority, however extensive and high, should be in reality considered inferior to that other? Surely, therefore, those who believe God to be Supreme, possessing the perfection of all attributes, independently of all other beings, must necessarily deny the identity of Christ with God: as the sun, although he is the most powerful and most splendid of all known created things, the greatest immediate source of life and enjoyment in this world, has yet no claim to be considered identical in nature with God, who has given to the sun all the light and animating warmth which he sheds on our globe. To effect a material change without the aid of physical means, is a power peculiar to God; yet we find this power exercised by several of the prophets on whom the

gifts of miracles was bestowed. Besides, it is evident from the first chapter of Genesis, that in the beginning of the creation God bestowed on man his own likeness, and sovereignty over all living creatures. Was not his own likeness and that dominion peculiar to God, before mankind were made partakers of them? Did God then deify man by such mark of distinction?

The following passages, I presume, suffice to illustrate the entire dependence of the Son on God, and his inferiority and subjection to, and his living by, him. *St. John*, ch. x. ver. 17 and 18: "Therefore doth my Father love me, because I lay down my life, that I might take it again. No man taketh it from me but I lay it down of myself. I have power to lay it down, and I have power to take it again. *This commandment have I received of my Father.*" Ch. xii. ver 49: "For I have not spoken of myself; but the Father *who sent me, he gave me commandment* what I should say, and what I should speak." Ch. xiv. ver. 31: "But that the world may know that I love the Father, and *as the Father gave me commandment, even so* I *do.*" Ch. xvii. vers. 1 and 2, Jesus in his prayer—"Glorify thy Son, that thy Son also may glorify thee; *as thou hast given him power* over all flesh, that he should give eternal life *to as many as thou hast given him.*" *John* ch. iii. ver. 35: "The Father loveth the Son, and *hath given all things* into his hand." Ch. v. ver. 19: "*The Son can do nothing of himself*, but what he seeth the Father do, &c." 22: "For the Father judgeth no man, but *hath committed* all judgment unto the Son." 30: "*I can of mine own self do nothing*: as I hear I judge; and my judgment is just; because *I seek not my own will, but the will of my Father who hath sent me.*" Ch. vi. ver. 37: "All that the *Father giveth me shall come to me*, &c." 38: "For I came down from heaven, *not to do mine own will, but the will of him that sent me.*" Ch. viii. ver. 28, "*That I do nothing of myself; but as my Father hath taught me*, I speak these things." Ver. 50: "I seek not my own glory; there is one that seeketh and judgeth." Ch. xiv. ver. 24: "The word which ye hear is not mine, *but the Father's which sent me.*" "Ver. 31: "*As the Father gave me commandment, even* so I do." And after his resurrection Jesus saith, Ch. xx. ver. 21: "*As my Father hath sent me, even so send I you.*" Ver. 17: "I ascend unto *my Father* and *your Father, to my God* and *your God.*" *Matthew*, ch. xii. ver. 18: from Esaiah, "Behold *my servant, whom I have chosen*; my beloved, in whom my soul is well pleased; *I will put*

my spirit upon him, and he shall shew judgment to the Gentiles." Ch. xxviii, ver. 18, "And Jesus came and spake unto them, saying, *All power is given unto me* in heaven and in earth." *Luke*, ch. i. ver. 32, "He shall be great, and shall be called *the Son of the Highest*: and the *Lord God shall give unto him* the throne of his father David." For testimony that he lived by the Father, see *John*, ch. vi. ver. 57: "As the living Father *hath sent me, and I live by the Father, &c.*" Ch. v. ver. 26, "For as the Father hath life in himself, *so hath he given to the Son* to have life in himself."

As the Reverend Editor in two instances quoted, perhaps inadvertently, the authority of the Apostles, I think myself justified in introducing some of the sentiments entertained by them on this subject, though I should be contented to deduce my arguments, as proposed by the Editor, exclusively from the direct authority of Jesus himself. I shall confine myself to the quotation of one or two texts from the Epistles of St. Paul. 1st *Corinthians*, ch. xv. vers 24—28: "Then cometh the end, when shall have *delivered up the kingdom to God*, even the Father. For he must reign till he hath put all enemies under his feet. The last enemy that shall be destroyed is death. For he hath put all things under his feet: But when he saith, All things are put under him, it is manifest that *He is excepted which did put all things under him*. And when all things shall be subdued unto him, then shall *the Son also himself be subject unto Him that put all things under him*, that God may be all in all." *Colossians*, ch. i. ver. 15: "Who is the image of the invisible God, *the first-born of every creature*."

From a due attention to the support of the above quoted texts, and to the term *Son*, distinctly mentioned in them, the reader will, I trust, be convinced, that those powers were conferred on Jesus, and declared by himself to have been received by him from the Father, as the Messiah, Christ, or anointed Son of God, and not solely in his human capacity; and that such interpretation as declares these and other passages of a similar effect to be applicable to Jesus as a man, is an unscriptural invention. Jesus spoke of himself throughout all the Scriptures only as the promised Messiah, vested with high glory from the beginning of the world. *John*, ch. xvii. ver. 5: "And now, O Father, glorify thou me with thine own self, with the glory which I had with thee before the world was." In this passage, with the same breath with which he prays for glory, he identifies *the nature*

in which he does so with that under which he lived with God before the creation of the world, and, of course, before his assuming the office of the Messiah. Ver. 24: "Father I will that they also whom thou hast given me *be with me, where I am*; that they may behold *my glory, which thou hast given me:* for thou *lovedst me before the foundation of the world.*" Here again Jesus prays, that his Apostle may witness such honour as the Father had bestowed on him, even before the foundation of the world. Ch. ix. vers. 35—37: "Dost thou" (says Jesus to a man who had been blind) "believe on the *Son of God?* He answered and said, Who is he Lord, that I might believe on him? And Jesus said unto him, Thou hast both *seen him, and it is he* (the Son of God) *that talketh with thee.*" Ch. xvii. vers. 1, 2. "Father, glorify *thy Son*; as *thou hast given him* power over all flesh, that he should give eternal life to as many as *thou hast given* him." John the Baptist, who bore witness of Christ, looked not upon him in any other view than as the Son of God. *St. John*, ch. i. ver. 34: "And I saw and bare record" (John the Baptist, pointing out the person of Jesus,) "that *this is the Son of God.*" *John*, ch. viii. ver. 42: "I proceeded forth and came from God; *neither came I of myself, but he sent me,*" and in numerous passages Jesus declares, that before he assumed the office of the Messiah in this world, he was entirely subject to and obedient to the Father, from whom he received the commission to come to this world for the salvation of mankind. But apparently with the very view of anticipating any misapprehension of his nature on the part of his disciples, to whom he had declared the wonderful extent of the powers committed to him by the Father, he tells them, *John*, ch. xiv. ver. 28, "The Father is greater than I." It would have been idle to have informed them of a truth, of which, as Jews, they would never have entertained the smallest question, that in his mere corporeal nature Jesus was inferior to his Maker; and it must therefore have been his spiritual nature, of which he here avowed the inferiority to that of God.

"The Son" is a term which, when used without being referred to another proper name found in the context, implies invariable the Son of God throughout the whole New Testament, especially when associated with the epithet "The Father;" so the latter epithet, when it stands alone, signifies "The Father of the universe." Matthew, ch. xxviii. ver. 19: "Go ye therefore, and teach all nations, baptizing

them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost." Ch. xi. ver. 27 : "No man knoweth the Son but the Father, &c." *Vide* rest of the Gospel. It is true indeed, that the angels of God, and some of the ancients of the human race, as well as the children of Israel, are honoured in the sacred writings with the name of 'Sons of God." *Job*, ch. i. ver. 6 : "There was a day when the sons of God came to present themselves before the Lord." *Genesis*. ch. vi. ver. 2 : "The Sons of God saw the daughters of men, that they were fair." *Hosea*, ch. i. ver. 10 : "Then it shall be said unto them, ye are *the sons of the living God*." Yet the epithet "Son of God," with the definite article prefixed, is appropriated to Christ, the first-born of every creature, as a distinct mark of honour which *he alone* deserves.

The Saviour having declared that unity existed between the Father and himself, *John*, ch. x. ver. 30, "I and my Father are one," a doubt arose with regard to the sense in which the unity affirmed in those words should be accepted. This Jesus removes by defining the unity so expressed as a subsisting concord of will and design, such as existed amongst his apostles, and not identity of being : *vide* ch xvii. ver. 11, of John, "Holy Father, keep through thine own name those whom thou hast given me, *that they may be one, as we are*." Ver. 22 : "The glory which thou gavest me I have given them : *that they may be one, even as we are one*." Should any one understand by these texts real unity and identity, he must believe that there existed a similar identity between each and all of the Apostles ;—nay, even that the disciples also were included in the Godhead, which in that case would consist of a great many times the number of persons ascribed to the Trinity. *John*, ch. xvii. ver. 20–23 : "Neither pray I for these alone but for them also which shall believe on me through their word —That they *all may be one* ; as thou, Father, art in me, and I in thee, that they also may be one in us,—That *they may be one, even as we are one. I in them, and thou in me* : that they may be made *perfect in one*." I know not how it is possible for those who profess obedience to the word of Christ to overlook the explanation he has here so clearly given of the nature of the unity existing between him and the Father, and to adopt a contrary system, apparently introduced by some Heathen writers to suit their polytheistical prejudices ; but I doubt not the Editor of the Friend of India will admit the necessity of giving preference to divine authority over any human opinion, however prevailing it may be.

The Saviour meant unity in design and will by the assertion also, that he was in God, or dwelt in God and God in him. *John*, ch. x. ver. 38: "That ye may know, and believe, that the father is in me, and I in him," as evidently appears from the following passages:—*John*, ch. xiv. ver. 29: "At that day ye shall know (addressing his Apostles) that I am in my Father, and *ye in me, and I in you.*" Ch. xvii. ver 21: "That they all may be one; as thou, Father, art in me and I in thee, that they also may be *one in us.*" *John*, ch. vi. ver. 56. "He that eateth my flesh, and drinketh my blood, *dwelleth in me, and in him.*" 1 *John*, ch. iv, ver. 15: "Whosoever shall confess that Jesus is the Son of God—God *dwelleth in him and he in God.*" There appear but three modes in which such passages are capable of interpretation. 1st, As conveying the doctrine tha the Supreme Being, the Son and the Apostles, were to be absorbed mutually as drops of water into one whole: which is conformable to the doctrines of that sect of Hindoo metaphysicians, who maintain, that in the end the human soul is absorbed into the Godhead; but is quite inconsistent with the faith of all denominations of Christians. 2ndly As proving an identity of nature, with distinction of person, between the Father, the Son, and the Apostles; a doctrine equally inconsistent with the belief of every Christian, as multiplying the number of persons of the Godhead far beyond what has ever been proposed by any sect. 3rdly As expressing *that unity* which is said to exist wherever there are found perfect concord, harmony, love, and obedience such as the Son evinced towards the Father, and taught the disciples to display towards the Divine will. That the language of our Saviour can be understood in this last sense solely, will, I trust, be readily acknowledged by every candid expounder of the sacred writings, as being the only one alike warranted by the common use of words, and capable of apprehension by the human understanding. Had not experience, indeed, too clearly proved that such metaphorical expressions, when taken singly and without attention to their contexts, may be made the foundation of doctrines quite at variance with the tenor of the rest of the Scriptures, I should have had no hesitation in submitting indiscriminately the whole of the doctrines of the New Testament to my countrymen; as I should have felt no apprehension that even the most ignorant of them, if left to the guidance of their own unprejudiced views of the matter, could misconceive the clear and distinct assertions they everywhere con-

tain of the unity of God and subordinate nature of his messenger Jesus Christ. Many of these have been already quoted; to which may be added the following: *John*, ch. xvii ver. 3: "This is life eternal, that they might know *thee the only true God* and Jesus Christ *Whom thou hast sent.*" Here Jesus in addressing the Father declares, that the means to be afforded for eternal salvation, were a knowledge of God, and of himself as the anointed messenger of God. Also ch. xix. ver. 17: Christ saith, "Why callest thou me good? there is none good but one, that is God." Here Jesus, pure as he was and without reproach, thinks it necessary to check the man who applies to him an epithet justly due to God only.—Ch. xiv. ver. 1: "Let not your heart be troubled: ye believe in God; believe *also* in me." In these words Jesus commands his disciples to put their trust in God, and further to believe in him as the Messenger of God; and thus plainly distinguishes himself from the Godhead. Nor can it for a moment be understood by the following passage *John*, ch. xiv. ver. 9: "He that hath seen me hath seen the Father," that God was literally and materially visible in the Son—a doctrine which would be directly contrary to the spirit of the religion taught by Jesus, and by all the Prophets of God. *Vide John*, ch. iv. ver. 24: "God is a Spirit." The Apostles also maintained a belief of the immateriality and invisibility of God. 1 *Tim.* ch. vi. ver. 1: 'Whom no man hath seen nor can see." 1 *John*, ch. iv. ver. 12: "No man hath seen God at any time." Besides, Jesus explains himself in the two passages immediately succeeding, that, by the phrase "He that hath seen me hath seen the Father," he meant only, that whosoever saw him and the works performed by him, witnessed proofs of the entire concord of his words and actions with the will and design of the Father, and ought therefore to have admitted the truth of his mission from God. *John*, ch. xiv ver. 9: "He that hath seen me hath seen the Father. How sayest thou then, Shew us the Father?" Ver. 10: "Believest thou not that I am in the Father, and the Father in me? The words that I speak unto you I speak not myself; but the Father, that dwelleth in me, he doeth the works." Ver. 11: "Believe me, that I am in the Father, and the Father in me: or else believe for the very works' sake." We have already seen in what sense the expression "dwelleth in me" must be understood, unless we admit that all true followers of Christ are admitted as portions of the Godhead. *John*,

vi. 56: "He that eateth my flesh and drinketh my blood, dwelleth in me and I in him." I *John*, ch. iv. ver. 12: "If we love one another, God dwelleth in us."

For my conviction, and for the satisfaction of those who consider the Precepts of Jesus as a guide to peace and happiness, his word, "They may be one, as we are," (*John*, ch. xvii. ver. 11) in defining the nature of the unity between God and Jesus, fully suffices. Disgusted with the puerile and unsociable system of Hindoo idolatry, and dissatisfied at the cruelty allowed by Musalmanism against Non-musalmans, I, on my searching after the truth of Christianity, felt for a length of time very much perplexed with the difference of sentiments found among the followers of Christ (I mean Trinitarians and Unitarians, the grand division of them), until I met with the explanation of the unity given by the divine Teacher himself as a guide to peace and happiness. Besides, when the Jews misunderstood the phrase used by the Saviour, "I and my Father are one," and accused him of blasphemy, (ch. x. ver. 33: "But for blasphemy, and because that thou, being a man, makest thyself God,") Jesus in answer to the accusation denied having made himself God, saying, vers. 34–36, "Is it not written in your Law, I said, Ye are Gods? If ye called them Gods, unto whom the word of God came, and the Scripture cannot be broken: say ye of him whom the Father hath sanctified, and sent into the world, Thou blasphemest; because *I said, I am the Son of God?*" How was it possible that Jesus, the founder of truth and true religion, should have *disavowed* the charge of making himself God by representing himself as the *Son*, honoured with sanctification *by the Father*, and *sent by him* to this world, if he were the true living God, possessed of everlasting sanctification, independently of another being? From this and all other local evidence the Pharisees and chief priests, though inveterate enemies of the Saviour, accused him to Pilate of having made himself the Son of God and King of the Jews; but relinquished the charge of making himself equal to God, or having ascribed to himself divine nature; although the latter (i. e. making himself God) was better calculated to excite the horror of the people. *Vide John*, ch. xix. ver. 7: "The Jews answered him, We have a law, and by our law he ought to die; because he made himself the Son of God." *Vide Matthew*, ch. xxvii. ver. 37: "And set up over his head his accusation written, 'This is Jesus, the King of the Jews.'" Ver. 43: "HE TRUSTED IN GOD; let him deliver him now, if

he will have him: for he said, I am the Son of God." That the epithet God is frequently applied in the sacred Scriptures, otherwise than to the Supreme Being, as pointed out by Jesus, may be shewn by the following, out of many instances to be found in the Bible. *Deut.* ch. x. ver. 17: "For the Lord your God is GOD OF GODS, and Lord of Lords, &c." Ch. xxxii. ver. 21: "They have moved me to jealousy with *that which is not God.*" *Exodus*, ch. xxii ver. 28: "*Thou shalt not revile the Gods*, nor curse the ruler of thy people." *Joshua*, ch. xxii ver. 22: "The Lord *God of Gods* knoweth" *Psalm*, lxxxii. ver. 1: "God standeth in the congregation of the mighty: *he judgeth among the Gods.*" Ver. 6: "I have said, *Ye are Gods*; and all of you are childern of the Most High." *Ps.* cxxxvi. ver. 2: "O give thanks unto *the God of Gods.*" *Isaiah*, ch. xli ver. 23: "Shew the things that are to come hereafter, that we may know *that ye are* Gods." *Psalm* xcvii. ver. 7: "*Worship him, all ye Gods.*" *Zeph.* ch. ii. ver. 11: "*He will famish all the Gods of the earth.*" *Exodus*, ch. iv. ver. 16: "God said to Moses, that he should be to Aaron *instead of God.*" Ch. vii. ver. 1: "See, *I have made thee a God* to Pharaoh." Also 1 *Cor.* ch. viii. ver. 5: "As *there be Gods many* and Lords many;" and the verse already quoted from *John*, ch. x. vers. 34, 35: "Jesus answered, Is it not written in your Law, *Ye are Gods*? If he *called them Gods, to whom the word of God came, &c.*" In none of these instances is it in any degree admissible, that by the epithet God it is implied, that the human beings to whom it was attached were thereby declared to be a portion of the Godhead. Moses was to be as a God to Aaron and a God to Pharaoh by the express command of the Almighty; but no Christian will thence argue the equality of Moses with the Father of all things. On what principle then can any stress be laid in defence of the deity of the Son on the prophetic expression quoted in Hebrews from Psalm xlv. ver. 6, "Thy throne, O God, is for ever and ever:" especially when we find in the very next verse, words that declare his subordinate nature; "Thou lovest righteousness, and hatest wickedness: therefore *God, thy God*, hath anointed thee with the oil of gladness above thy fellows"? We cannot allow much weight to the phrase "for ever," as establishing literally the eternal nature or the power of the Son, this phrase being often found metaphorically applied in the Scriptures to other created beings: as *Proverbs*, ch. xxix. ver. 14: "The king that faithfully judgeth the poor, his throne shall be established for

ever." *Deut.* ch. iv. ver. 40: "And that thou mayest prolong thy days in the earth, which the Lord thy God giveth thee, for ever." Similar to this is the remarkable expression of Jesus to Mary after his resurrection, and therefore, at a time when no design can be conceived to have existed that could have been advanced by his any longer withholding the knowledge of his true nature, if any thing remained unrevealed during the pevious period of his mission on earth. *John*, ch. xx. ver. 17: "Go to my brethren, and say unto them, I ascend unto *my Father and your Father* and to *my God* and *your God*."

After a slight attention to the terms Lord and God being often applied to men in the sacred writings, can any weight be allowed to the exclamation of the astonished disciple, *John*, ch. xx. ver. 28: "My Lord and my God," especially as the Apostle who relates the circumstance within a few verses concludes by saying, ver 31. "These are within that ye might believe that *Jesus is the Christ, the Son of God*;" but nowhere desires the readers of his Gospel to believe that Jesus is God? Does not common sense point out the inferiority and subordination of a being, though called God, to one who is at the same time declared to be *his* God, *his* father, *his* sanctifier, and *his* promoter to the state of exaltation.

The passages *John*, ch. i. ver. 1: "The Word was God, and the Word was with God," which contains the term God twice, may according to such use of the term be interpreted without involving inconsistence with itself, or the contradiction which it apparently implies with another most decisive passage in *Deut.* ch. xxxii. ver. 39, where Moses representeth God as declaring that *with* him there is no God: "See now that I, even I am he; and *there is no God with me*;" if it should be understood to signify in both instances the Supreme Deity. Should we follow on the other hand the interpretation adopted by Trinitarian Christians, namely, that the Godhead, though it is one, yet consists of three persons, and consequently one substance of the Godhead might abide with the other, both being equally God; we should in that case be forced to view the Godhead in the same light as we consider mankind and other genera, for no doubt can exist of the unity of mankind:—the plurality of men consists in their persons; and therefore we may safely, under the same plea, support the unity of man, notwithstanding the plurality of persons included under the term mankind. In that case also Christians ought in conscience to refrain from accusing Hindoos of polytheism; for every Hindoo, we

daily observe, confesses the unity of the Godhead. They only advance a plausible excuse for their polythesim, wich is, that notwithstanding the unity of the Godhead, it consists of millions of substances assuming different offices correspondent to the number of the various transactions superintended in the universe by divine providence which they consider as infinitely more numerous than those of the Trinitarian scheme

The Saviour in his appeal, "If I do not the works of my Father, believe me not," *John*, ch. x. ver. 37, meant of course the perfomance of works prescribed by the Father, and tending to his glory A great number of passages in the Scriptures, a few of which I have already cited, and the constant practice of the Saviour, illustrate this fact beyond doubt. In raising Lazarus after he had died, Jesus prayed to the Father for the power of bringing him to life again, and thanked him for his compliance. *John*, ch. xi. ver. 41: "And Jesus lifted up his eyes, and said, Father, I thank thee that thou hast heard me." Besides, in declaring that whosoever believed him would do not only the works he performed, but even works of greater importance, Jesus never can be supposed to have promised to such believers equality in power with God, or to have exalted them above himself. *John*, ch. xiv. ver. 12: "Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that believeth on me, the works that I do shall he do also: and greater works than these shall he do." Ch. vi. ver. 29: "Jesus answered and said unto them, This is the work of God, that *ye believe* on him whom he hath sent." It must be admitted that one, who can perform works of God independently of the Deity, is either greater than or equal in power to the Almighty. The wonderful works which Jesus was empowered to perform drew a great number of the Jews to a belief in Jesus as the promised Messiah, and confirmed his Apostles in their already acquired faith in the Saviour, and in the entire union of will and design that subsisted between him and the Father, as appears from the following passages; *John*, ch. vi. ver. 14: "Then those men, when they had seen the miracle that Jesus did, said, This is of a truth that *Prophet that should come into the world.*" See also *John*, ch. x. ver. 21.

The Scriptures indeed in several places declare, that the Son was superior even to the angels in heaven, living from the beginning of the world to eternity, and that the Father created all things by him and for him. At the same time I must, in conformity to those very

authorities, believe him as produced by the Supreme Deity among created Beings. *John*, ch. v. ver. 26: "For as the Father hath life in himself, so hath he given to the Son to have life in himself." *Colossians*. ch. i. ver. 15. "Who is the image of the invisible God, the *first born of every creature*."

CHAPTER III.

Separate consideration of the seven positions of the Reviewer.

In attempting to support his first position, that Jesus was possessed of ubiquity, the Reverend Editor has quoted two passages. The first is, *St. John*, ch. iii. ver. 13: "No man hath ascended up to heaven, but he that came down from heaven, even the Son of man who is in heaven;" wherein Jesus, as the Editor conceives, declares his location both in heaven and on the earth at one time. The Editor rests entirely the force of his argument upon the term "is," in the phrase "who *is* in heaven," as signifying the presence of Jesus in heaven while he was conversing with Nicodemus on earth. This argument might perhaps carry some weight with it, were not the frequent use of the present tense in a preterite or future sense observed in the sacred writings, and were not a great number of other passages to determine that the term "is," in this instance, must be understood in the past sense. *John*, ch viii. ver. 58: "Jesus said unto them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Before Abraham was, *I am*." Here the same verb, though found in the form of the present tense, must obviously be taken in a preterite sense. *John*, ch. xi. ver. 8: "His disciples *say* unto him, Master, the Jews of late sought to stone thee, &c." that is, His disciples *said* unto him. Ver. 38: "Jesus therefore again groaning in himself *cometh* to the grave," *i. e.* the *came* to the grave. *Matthew*, ch. xxvi ver. 2: "Ye know that after two days is the feast of the passover, and the Son of man *is* betrayed to be crucified;" that is, the Son of man *is to be* betrayed and to be crucified. *Vide* the remainder of the chapter. *John*, ch. xiii. ver. 6: "Then *cometh* he to Simon Peter, &c." that is, *he came* to Simon Peter, &c. Again *John*, ch. xvi. ver. 32: "That ye shall be scattered, every man to his own, and shall leave me alone: yet *I am* not alone," *i. e.* yet *I shall not be* alone. So in all the prophecies contained in the Old, as well as in the New Testament, the future tense must frequently be understood where the terms used are those grammatically appropriated to the preterite: as *Matthew*, ch. ii. ver. 18: "In Rama *was* there a voice heard." that is, *will there be* a voice heard. Ver. 15: "Out of Egypt *have I called* my Son," i. e. *I will*

call my Son. After a diligent attention to the following passage, no one will, I presume, scruple to conclude that the Son was actually absent from heaven during his locality on the earth, and consequently the phrase quoted by the Editor is applicable only to the past time. *John*, ch. vi. ver. 62: "What and if ye shall see the Son of Man ascend up where he *was* before." The verb *was*, accompanied with the term *before* in this passage, positively implies the absence of Jesus from heaven during his stay on the earth. Ch. xvi. ver. 7: "Nevertheless I tell you the truth: it is expedient for you that I *go away*. If I go not away, the Comforter will not come unto you; but if *I depart*, I will send him unto you." Ver 5: "But now I *go* my way to him that sent me." Ver. 28: *I came forth* from the Father, and am *come* into the world: again I *leave* the world, and *go* to the Father." Ch. xiii. ver 36: "Jesus answered him, Whither *I go*, thou canst not follow me now, but thou shalt *follow* me afterwards." Ch. xiii. ver. 1: "Jesus knew that his hour was come, that he should *depart out* of this world unto the Father." For further conviction, I may safely refer even to the preceding terms of the verse relied on by the Editor:—"No man hath ascended up to heaven, but he that came down from heaven, even the Son of man." For the attribute of omnipresence is quite inconsistent with the human notions of the ascent and descent effected by the Son of Man. Is it possible to reconcile the contents of hundreds of such passages, consistent with reason and conformable to the established order of interpretation, to the apparent meaning of a single phrase, that taken literally, is totally opposed to common sense? For to a being named *the Son* or *the created*, (the one term implying the other,) and sent from one mansion to another, the attribute of ubiquity can never be justly ascribed

Besides, in examining the original Greek Testament, we find in the phrase in question, "Who is in heaven," that the present participle ων, "being," is used in lieu of εστι, "is," viz. ο ων εν τω ουρανω; a true translation of which should be, "the *ens*" or "*being* in heaven:" and as the nominative case ων, "the being," requires a verb to complete the sense, it should be connected with the nearest verb αναβεβηκεν, "hath ascended," no other verb in fact existing in the sentence.

The whole verse in the original runs thus: Και ουδεις αναβεβηκεν εις τον ουρανον ει μη ο εκ του ουρανου καταβας ο υιος του ανθρωπου ο ων εν

τω ϗρανω. A verbal translation of the above would run thus: "And no one hath ascended into heaven, if not the out of heaven descender —the Son of man—the being in heaven;" which words, arranged according to the rules of English grammar, should run thus: "And no one except the descender from heaven, the Son of man, the being in heaven, hath ascended into heaven," In this case the presence of the Son in heaven must be understood as *referring* to the time of his ascent, and not to that of his addressing himself to Nicodemus—an explanation which, though it does not serve to establish the omnipresence of the Son urged by the Editor ought to be satisfactory to an impartial mind.* The second passage which the Editor quotes on this subject is, *Matthew* ch. xviii. ver. 20: "For where two or three are gathered together in my name, there *am* I in the midst of them." Is it not evident that the Saviour meant here, by being in the midst of two or three of his disciples, his guidance to them when joined in searching for the truth, without preferring any claim to ubiquity? We find similar expressions in the Scriptures, wherein the guidance of the Prophets of God is also meant by words that would imply their presence. *Luke*, ch. xvi. ver. 29: Abraham saith unto him, '*They have* Moses and the Prophets; let them hear them.' No one will suppose that this expression is intended to signify that the Jews actually had Moses and the Prophets in person among them, or that they could hear them speak in the literal and not in the figurative sense of the words; nor can any one deduce the omnipresence of Moses and the Prophets from such expressions.

The second position advanced by the Reverend Editor is, that "Jesus ascribes to himself a knowledge and an incomprehensibility

* See Bishop Middleton "Doctrine of the Greek Article," Part 1, page 42, Note: "We are to refer the time of the participle to the time of the act, &c., implied in the verb; for past, present, and future cannot be meant otherwise than in respect to that act." Leviticus, ch. vii. ver. 33: ο προσφερων—αυτω εσται ο βραχιων ο δεξιος "The offering (person) for him shall be the right shoulder." Ch. xiv. ver. 47: ο εσθων —πλυνει τα ιματια αυτου "The eating (person) shall wash his clothes." These present participles are referred to a time present with respect to the act of the verbs connected with them; but future with respect to the command of God. John, ch. i. ver. 49: ονται—εξδον σε "I saw thee when thou wast." Moreover, we frequently find the present participle used in the past sense, even without reference to the time of the verb. John, ch. ix. ver. 25: τυφλος ων αρτι βλεπω "Being blind now I see," that is, "Having been blind now I see."

of nature equal to that of God, and peculiar to God alone;" and in attempting to substantiate this point, he quotes *Matthew*, ch. xi. ver. 27: "No man knoweth the Son, but the Father; neither knoweth any man the Father, save the Son, and he to whomsoever the Son will reveal him." Here the Editor seems to rest on two grounds; 1st, That God is incomprehensible to man; 2ndly, That incomprehensibility of nature is peculiar to God alone:—whence the Reverend Editor draws his inference that Jesus, knowing the nature of God, and being himself possessed of an incomprehensible nature, is equal with God. Now I should wish to know it the Editor, by the term "incomprehensible," understands a total impossiblity of comprehension in any degree, or only the impossibility of attaining to a perfect knowledge of God. If the former, I must be under the necessity of denying such a total incomprehensibility of the Godhead; for the very passage cited by the Editor declares God to be comprehensible not to the Son alone, but also to every one who would receive revelation from the Son; and in this case the latter part of the passage, "*He to whomsoever the Son will reveal him*," must be acknowledged as conveying an exception to the assertion made in the former part of the sentence, "Neither knoweth *any man* the Father, &c."

We find also the following passages in *John*, ch. xiv. vers. 16, 17, "And I will pray the Father, and he shall give you another Comforter, that he may abide with you for ever: even the Spirit of truth; whom the world cannot receive, because it seeth him not, neither knoweth him: *but ye know him*;"—wherein Jesus ascribes to his disciples a knowledge of the Holy Ghost, whom the Editor considers one of the persons of the Godhead, possessed of the same nature with God. But if the Editor understands by the passage he has quoted, the incomprehensibility of the real nature of the Godhead. I admit the position but deny his inference, that such an incomprehensibility proves the nature of the object to be divine, as being peculiar to God alone: for it appears evident that a knowledge of the real nature even of a common leaf, or a visible star, surpasses human comprehension; how then can a simple assertion, setting forth the incomprehensibility of an object, be considered as establishing its identity with God? In *Mark*, ch. xiii. ver 32, "But of that day and that hour *knoweth* no man, no, not the angles which are in heaven, neither the Son, but the Father," we have a passage, which, though it affirms in a stronger manner an *ignorance of the day* of resurrection.

than that already quoted does of God, yet will not, I presume, be considered by any one as conveying the slightest insinuation of the divine nature of that day; though time is a common object of adoration amongst Idolators. In treating of this point the Editor quotes another text, *Matth.*, ch. xi. ver. 28: "Come unto me, all ye that labour and are heavy laden, and I will give you rest:"—wherein Jesus declares his power of affording rest, which the Editor considers as peculiar to God. All the prophets, as well as Jesus, were from time to time sent by the Almighty to afford mental rest to mankind, by imparting to them the comforts of divine revelation; and by so doing they only fulfilled the commission given them by God: but no one ever supposed that in so doing they established claims to be considered incarnations of the divine essence. *Proverbs*, ch. xxix. ver. 17: "Correct thy son, and he shall give thee rest: yea, he shall give delight unto thy soul." Revelation guides us to a sure belief, that it is God that affords peace of mind, effects cures of the body, and bestows all sorts of comforts on his creatures, "I thank thee," (says Jesus, *Matthew*, ch. xi. ver. 25,) "O Father, Lord of heaven and earth, because thou hast hid these things from the wise and prudent, and hast revealed them unto babes." Both our perception indeed and sacred authorities point out, that he lavishes all these gifts on us through prophets, physicians, and other physical causes, that are not considered by any sect as of a divine nature.

The third position is, that Jesus exercised, in an independent manner, the prerogative of forgiving sins, which is peculiar to God alone: and the Reverend Editor quotes the passage, *Mark*, ch. ii. ver. 5: "Thy sins be forgiven thee;" and the 9th verse for "Whether is it easier to say, Thy sins be forgiven thee; or to say Arise and walk?" Taking those texts as the grounds of his position, I therefore beg to call the attention of the Editor to the passage almost immediately following, in which the evangelical writer intimates, that this power of forgiving sins, as well as of healing men, was given by the Almighty: "But when the multitude saw it, they marvelled, and glorified God, *who had given* such power unto *men*." Does not this passage convey an express declaration, that Jesus was as much dependent on God in exercising the power of forgiving sins and healing the sick, as the prophets who came forth from God before him? The apostles, who witnessed the power of forgiving sins in the Saviour, were thoroughly impressed with a belief that it was the

Almighty Father who forgave sins through the Son. *Acts*, ch. v. vers. 31, 32: "*Him hath God exalted* with his right hand to be a Prince and a Saviour, for to give repentance to Israel, *and forgiveness of sins*. And we are his witnesses of these things." Ch. xiii. ver. 38: "Be it known, therefore, men and brethren, that *through this man*, (meaning the Saviour,) is preached unto you the *forgiveness of sins*." I know not how far religious zeal in the breasts of many of the followers of Christ may excuse them in encroaching upon the prerogative which revelation and reason ascribe to the Divine Majesty alone; but Jesus himself clearly avows, that the power of forgiving sins had its source and origin in God alone, as appears from his petitioning the Father to forgive those that were guilty of bringing the death of the cross upon him, the greatest of all imaginable crimes. *Luke*, ch. xiii ver. 34: "Father forgive them," (says Jesus,) "for they know not what they do;" and from his directing all those that followed him to pray the Father alone for forgiveness of sins. *Luke*, ch. xi. ver. 4: "And forgive us our sins." *Matthew*, ch. vi. ver. 14: "If ye forgive men their trespasses, your heavenly Father will forgive you."

The fourth position advanced by the Editor is, that "Almighty power is also claimed by Jesus in the most unequivocal manner." In endeavouring to demonstrate this the Editor notices three passages of *John*, (ch. v. vers. 21—23:) "As the Father raiseth up the dead and quickeneth them, even so the Son quickeneth whom he will. For the Father judgeth no man, but hath committed all judgment unto the Son: that all men should honour the Son, even as they honour the Father." A candid inquirer after truth must, I think, feel surprised and disappointed, that in quoting these texts, the Editor should have overlooked the force of the words in which the Son declares that he hath received the commission to judge from the Father: "For the Father judgeth no man, *but hath committed all judgment unto the Son*." I am ready to admit, indeed that, taken simply as they stand, the words "As the Father raiseth up the dead and quickeneth them, even so the Son quickeneth whom he will," and "That all men should honour the Son, even as they honour the Father," might very readily be understood as implying an assertion of equality with the Father. But this affords one of numerous instances of the danger of resting an opinion on the apparent meaning of the words of insulated passages of Scripture, without attention to the context: for I am convinced that no unprejudiced person can

peruse the verses preceding and subsequent to those quoted by the Editor, without feeling that a more explicit disavowal of equality with God can hardly be expressed by language than that which they contain. I must therefore beg permission to give the entire passage in this place, though some parts of it have been quoted before in support of arguments already discussed. It is to be observed, that the occasion of the expressions here made use of by Jesus, was the accusation brought against him by the Jews, that he had made himself equal with God. *John*, ch. v. vers. 19—36: "Then answered Jesus and said unto them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, *The Son can do nothing of himself* but what he seeth the Father do: for what things soever he doeth, these also doeth the Son likewise. For the Father loveth the Son, and sheweth him all things that himself doeth: and he will shew him greater works than these, that ye may marvel. For as the Father raiseth up the dead, and quickeneth them even so the Son quickeneth whom he will. For the Father judgeth no man, but hath committed all judgment unto the Son; that all men should honour the Son, even as they honour the Father. He that honoureth not the Son, honoureth not the Father who hath sent him. Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that heareth my word, and *believeth on him that sent me*, hath everlasting life, and shall not come into condemnation; but is passed from death unto life. Verily, verily, I say unto you, The hour is coming, and now is, when the dead shall hear the voice of the Son of God: and they that hear shall live. For as the Father hath life in himself, *so hath he given to the Son* to have life in himself; and *hath given him authority* to execute judgment also, because he is the Son of Man. Marvel not at this: for the hour is coming in the which all that are in the graves shall hear his voice, and shall come forth; they that have done good, unto the resurrection of life; and they that have done evil, unto the resurrection of damnation. *I can of mine ownself do nothing. as I hear, I judge:* and my judgment is just, *because I seek not mine own will, but the will of the Father who hath sent me.* If I bear witness of myself, my witness is not true. There is another that beareth witness of me; and I know that the witness which he witnesseth of me is true. Ye sent unto John, and he bare witness unto the truth. But I receive not testimony from men: but these things I say, that ye might be saved. He was a burning and a shining light: and ye were willing for a season to rejoice in

his light. But I have greater witness than that of John: for the works which the *Father hath given me to finish*, the same work that I do, *bear witness of me, that the Father hath sent me.*"

It would have been strange indeed, had Jesus, in repelling the accusation of blasphemy, which had wrought on the minds of the Jews so far that they sought to kill him, confirmed their assertion, that he made himself equal with God, and thus prematurely endangered his own life; but we find that so far from being further incensed by the explanation above quoted, they seem to have quietly acquiesced in his appeal to their own Scriptures, that the Messiah should have all the power and authority which he asserted the Father had given to himself. Ver. 46: "For had ye believed Moses, ye would have believed me; for he wrote of me." The only text in the writings of Moses that refers to the nature of the Messiah, is that of *Deuteronomy*, ch. xviii. vers. 15 and 18, quoted by St. Peter in the Acts of the Apostles, ch. iii. ver. 22, and by St. Stephen, ch. vii. ver. 37: Moses said to the children of Israel. "The Lord thy God will raise up unto thee a Prophet from the midst of thee, of thy brethren, *like unto me: unto him* ye shall hearken." The words which the Lord addressed to Moses were exactly of the same import: "I will raise them up a Prophet from among their brethren, *like unto thee*, &c." It was no doubt to this remarkable passage that Jesus referred, and nothing can more distinctly prove the light in which he wished to be considered, namely, that of a Messenger or Prophet of God. But this is not the only instance in which Jesus entirely disclaims the attribute of omnipotence. On many other particular occasions he declares, in the strongest language, his want of almighty power, and his constant need of divine influence. *Matthew*, ch. xx. ver. 23: "And he saith unto them, ye shall drink indeed of my cup, and be baptized with the baptism that I am baptized with: but to sit on my right hand, and on my left *is not mine to give*; but it shall be given to them for whom it is prepared of my Father." Ch. xii. ver. 28: "But if I cast out devils *by the Spirit of God*, then the kingdom of God is come unto you." Ch. xxvi. ver. 39: "And he went a little further, and fell on his face, and prayed, saying, O my Father, if it be possible, let this cup pass from me: nevertheless not as I will, but as thou wilt." Ver. 42: "He went away again the second time, and prayed saying, O my Father, if this cup may not pass away from me, except I drink it, thy will be done." *Luke*, ch. xxii. ver. 32:

"But I have prayed for thee, that thy faith fail not, &c." *John*, ch. xii. ver. 27: "Father, save me from this hour." Whosoever honours God cannot, I presume, consistently refuse to honour his Prophet, whom he dignified with the name of "Son of God;" and as he honours God, he will also honour that Prophet, though he be well aware of the distinction between the Almighty and his chosen Son. The honour paid to the Prophet may in this sense be fairly considered the test of the real degree of respect entertained for God—as Jesus saith, *Matthew*, ch. x, ver. 40, "He that receiveth you, receiveth me; and he that receiveth me, receiveth *him* that sent me." The obvious meaning of which words is, as far as men listen to your instructions, they listen to mine, and in so far they receive the commandments of God who hath sent me. Prejudice alone could, I think, infer from such expressions, that those who received the Apostles were literally receiving God himself under their form and substance. Equally demonstrative of prejudice, I conceive, would it be to deduce the identity or equality of the Father and the Son from the following passage, *John*, ch. v. ver. 23: "That all men should honour the Son, even as they honour the Father. He that honoureth not the Son, honoureth not the Father who hath sent him." For in this very passage the Son is represented as the Messenger of the Father, and for that reason only entitled to honour. That the preposition [conj.] "as" implies here, as in many other places, likeness in nature and quality, and not in exact degree of honour, is illustrated by its obvious meaning in the last verse of *Matthew*, ch. v., "Be ye therefore perfect, even as your Father in heaven is perfect;" for by these words no one can conceive, that equality in degree of perfection between God and the disciples is intended to be enjoined.

The fifth position is, that his heavenly Father had committed to Jesus the final judgment of all who have lived since the creation. I readily admit the correctness of this position, and consider the fact as confirming the opinion maintained by me, and by numerous other followers of Christ, as to the Son's total dependence on the commission of God for his power in administering such judgment. I agree also with the Reverend Editor, in esteeming the nature of this office most important; and that nothing but the gift of supernatural wisdom can qualify a being to judge the conduct of thousands of millions of individuals, living at different times from the beginning of the world to the day of resurrection. It is, however, perfectly consistent with

the omnipotence and wisdom of God, who is declared by revelation to be "able of these stones to raise up children unto Abraham." (*Matthew*, ch. iii. ver. 9), and with whom all things are possible, (*Luke*, ch. i. ver. 37), to bestow wisdom equal to the important nature of this office on the first-born of every creature, whom he has anointed and exalted even above his angels. But the Editor goes much further than I am willing to follow him, in concluding the omniscience of the Son, from the circumstance of his distributing final judgment; since Jesus not only disclaimed that attribute, but even expressly avowed that he received his qualifications for exercising judgment from God. With respect to his disclaiming omniscience, see *Mark*, ch. xiii. ver. 23; "But of that day and that hour knoweth no man, no, not the angels which are in heaven, neither the Son, but the Father." Omniscience, as the Editor must be well aware, has no limit; but here Jesus expressly declares, that he is ignorant of the day appointed by the Father for the resurrection and judgment. What words can be more expressly declaratory than these of the finite nature of the knowledge granted to Jesus, however its extent may actually surpass our limited capacity? As a proof that his judicial authority is derived from God, see *John*, ch. v. vers. 26, 27: "For as the Father hath life in himself, *so hath he given* to the Son to have life in himself: and *hath given him authority* to execute judgment also." Ver. 30: "I can of mine own self do nothing: as I hear, I judge: and my judgment is just; because I seek not mine own will, but the will of the Father which hath sent me." Is it possible to misunderstand the assertion contained in these words, that both the authority and the ability to judge are gifts bestowed on the Son by the omnipotent Father?

The sixth position is, that in several instances Jesus accepted worship "due to no man, but to God alone"; and instances of his receiving worship from a blind man, a leper, from mariners, and from his disciples, are adduced from the evangelical writings. Every one must admit that the word "worship," both in common acceptation and in the Scriptural writings, is used sometimes as implying an external mark of religious reverence paid to God, and at other times, as signifying merely the token of civil respect due to superiors; and that concurrent circumstances in every instance determine the real sense in which the word should be taken. Among the Prophets of God, Jesus was not the only one that permitted himself to be worshipped, as we find Daniel the Prophet allowing himself such worship

Daniel, ch. ii. ver. 46: "Then the king Nebuchadnezzar fell upon his face, and worshipped Daniel." Daniel, like Jesus, neither rebuked the man who worshipped him, nor did he feel indignant at such a tribute of respect; yet we cannot find any subsequent assertion that he had offended God by suffering himself to be the object of the king's *worship* in this instance. Besides, Jesus himself uses the word 'worship' in the latter sense, (I mean that of civil reverence,) in one of the evangelical parables, where he represents a servant as worshipping his master. *Matthew*, ch. xviii. ver. 26: "The servant therefore fell down and worshipped him." From the circumstance of Jesus positively commanding human beings to worship God alone in spirit, and not in any form or shape, either human or angelic; as, *John*, ch. iv. ver. 24: "God is a spirit; and they that worship him must worship him in spirit and in truth." *Matthew*, ch. iv. ver. 10: "Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and Him only shalt thou serve:" and from the circumstance of his rebuking the man who called him "good master," on the ground that the term "good" should be peculiarly applied to God alone. (*Matt.* ch. xix. ver. 17,) we necessarily conclude that Jesus accepted worship only as a mark of human respect, and acknowledgment of gratitude. Let us moreover ascertain from the context, the sentiments which the blind man, the leper, the mariners, and the disciples of Jesus, entertained of his nature; and we can no longer hesitate to believe, that they meant by the worship they offered, only the manifestation of their reverence for him as a superior, indeed, yet still as a created being. The question is, Did those that offered worship to Jesus evince that they believed him to be God, or one of the three persons of the Godhead, and equal to God? Nothing of the kind—the blind man, after his cure, spoke of Jesus as a Prophet, and a righteous man, and believed him when he said he was the Son of God. *John*, ch. ix. ver. 31: "Now we know" (says the blind man,) "that God heareth not sinners: but if any man be a worshipper of God, and doeth his will, him he heareth." Ver. 33: "If this man were not of God, he could do nothing." And in answer to the question of Jesus, "Dost thou believe on the Son of God?" he answers, "Lord, I believe. And he worshipped him." Ver. 38. The unclean spirit which is said in Mark, to have worshipped Jesus, "cried with a loud voice and said, What have I to do with thee, Jesus, thou Son of the most high God? *I adjure thee by God*, that thou torment me not." *Mark*, ch. v. ver. 7. This adjuration

would have been absurd if Jesus were himself addressed as God; and clearly shews, that the worship offered was to deprecate the power of a being whose nature was subordinate to that of God, by whose name he was adjured. The leper, too, glorified God, while to Jesus he gave only thanks for being the instrument of his cure. *Luke*, ch. xvii vers. 15, 16: "And one of them, when he saw that he was healed, turned back, and with a loud voice glorified God, and fell down on his face at his feet, *giving him thanks*." The mariners who worshipped Jesus declared at the same instant, "Of a truth thou art the Son of God." *Matthew*, ch. xiv. ver. 33. The woman of Canaan, who is also stated in *Matthew*, ch. xv. ver. 25, to have worshipped Jesus, addressed him, ver. 22, as "the son of David," by which term she certainly would not have designated a being whom she worshipped as God. Peter, the most celebrated of his disciples, showed his faith in acknowledging Jesus merely as the Christ, or in other words with the same exact sense, *the anointed* of God which is certainly far from implying "very God." *Mark*, ch. viii ver 29. Even after the crucifixion we find the disciples conversing of Jesus only as "a prophet, mighty in deed and in word before God and all the people." *Luke*, ch. xxiv. ver. 19. It was Jesus himself risen from the dead whom they addressed, yet throughout the remainder of the chapter, which concludes with the account of his being carried up to heaven, they are only further taught that this prophet was the promised Messiah, but by no means that it was their duty to worship him as God. Peter, in the name of all the disciples declares, *John*, ch. vi. ver. 69. "We believe and are sure that thou art that Christ, the Son of the living God." And as already observed, the disciple John declares, that the object of the Gospel is, "that it may be believed that Jesus is the Christ, the Son of God." *John*, ch. xx. ver. 31. When the leper prayed to Jesus for cure, he addressed him only with the term Κυριὸς (*Matthew*, ch. viii. ver. 2,) which in Greek is used as synonymous to Lord or Master, and often applied to superior persons.

Every Christian is morally bound to evince obedience to the commandments of Jesus, and exert himself to follow his example. It behoves us therefore to ascertain, what his commandments are with regard to the object of sacred worship and prayer, and in what manner he himself performed those solemn religious duties. The very act of prayer, indeed, implies an acknowledgment of inferiority

to the being adored; but though Trinitarians affirm that such devotion was paid by Jesus only in his human capacity, his form of prayer ought still to be sufficient to guide human creatures as to the Being to whom their prayers should be addressed. Let us examine, therefore, whether Jesus in his acknowledged human capacity ever offered worship or prayer to what Trinitarians term the second or third person of the Godhead, or once directed his followers to worship or pray to either of them. But so far from finding a single direction of the kind, we observe on the contrary, that Jesus strictly enjoins us to worship the Father alone in that form of prayer which he offered for our guidance, *Matthew*, ch. vi. ver. 9: "After this manner therefore pray ye, *Our Father* which art in heaven, &c." "Pray to *thy Father* which is in secret: and *thy Father*, which seeth in secret, shall reward thee openly." In the same way, when the Saviour himself prays, he addresses the Father alone. *Matthew*, ch. xxvi. ver. 53: "Thinkest thou," says Jesus to Peter, "that I cannot now *pray to my Father*?" *John*, ch. xvi. 26: "I will *pray the Father* for you." *Luke*, ch. xxii. ver. 41 and 42: "And he (the Saviour) was withdrawn from them about a stone's cast, and kneeled down, and prayed, saying, *Father*, if thou be willing, remove this cup from me." *Mark*, ch. xiv. vers. 35 and 36: "And fell on the ground, and prayed, that if it were possible, the hour might pass from him. And he said, *Abba, Father*, all things are possible unto thee." *Luke*, ch. vi. ver. 12: "He went out unto a mountain to pray, and continued all night *in prayer to God*." *Luke*, ch. x. ver. 21: "In that hour Jesus rejoiced in spirit, and said I thank thee, O Father, Lord of heaven and earth," *John*, ch. xi. ver. 41: "And Jesus lifted up his eyes, and said, Father, I thank thee that thou hast heard me." *Matthew*, ch. xxvii. ver. 46: "My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me?" *John*, ch. iv. ver. 22: "Ye worship ye know not what; we know what we worship." No creed drawn up by men, nor opinion entertained by any sect, can by an unbiassed searcher after the true doctrines of Christianity be suffered to set aside the express authority and constant example of the gracious author of this religion.

The last position is, that Jesus associated his own name with that of God in the rite of baptism, intended to remain in force to the end of the world; and ordained by the passage, *Matthew*, ch. xxviii. ver. 19: "Go ye and teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost." A profession of

belief in God is unquestionably common to all the religions supposed to have been founded upon the authority of the Old Testament: but each is distinguished from the other by a public profession of faith in their respective founders, expressing such profession in a language that may clearly exhibit the inferior nature of those founders to the Divine Being of whom they declare themselves the messengers. This system has been carried on from the first, and was no doubt intended to serve as a perpetual distinguishing mark of faith. The Jews claim that they have revelation, rendering a belief not in God alone, but in Moses also, incumbent upon them, *Exodus*, ch. xiv. 31: "The people feared the Lord and believed the Lord, and his servant Moses." But the term "his servant Moses," in this passage, suffices to prove the subordination of Moses, though declared, equally with God, to be an object of their belief. In like manner Muhammadans, in the first acknowlegdment of that system of religion, are directed to profess faith in God, and also in Muhammad, his messenger, in the following form: لا إله إلا الله محمد رسول الله "There is no God except the true God, Muhammad is his messenger." The term "his messenger" removes every doubt of Muhammad's identity or equality with God; so the epithet "Son" found in the passage, "Baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, &c." ought to be understood and admitted by every one as expressing the created nature of Christ, though the most highly exalted among all creatures. If baptism were administered to one embracing Christianity in the name of the Father and the Holy Ghost, he would thereby no more become enrolled as a Christian, than as a Jew or as a Muhammadan; for both of them, in common with Christians, would readily submit to be baptized in the name of God and his prevailing influence over the universe. But as Christianity requires peculiarly a faith in Jesus, as the promised Messiah, the gracious Saviour enjoins baptism in the name of *the Son* also, so as to distinguish his happy followers from the Jews and the rest of the people. A mere association of names in divine commandments therefore never can be considered as tending to prove identity or equality between the subjects of those names:—such junction of names is found frequently in the Sacred Writings without establishing unity among the persons whom those names impl

The Editor quotes the following passage, *Matthew*, ch. xxviii. ver. 18: "All power in heaven and earth is delivered unto me," recommending it as a sure proof of the deity of Jesus. I regret very much that the force of the expression "is delivered unto me," found in this passage, should have escaped the discerning notice of the Reverend Editor. Does not the term "delivered" shew evidently an entire dependence of Jesus upon the Being who has committed to him such power? Is it consistent with the nature of an omnipotent God to exercise power delivered to him by another being, or to confess that the power he possesses has been received by him from another.

As to the question of the Editor, "Did Muhammad, arrogant as he was, ever make such a declaration as Jesus did, namely, that 'I am with you always even to the end of the world?'" I will not renew the subject, as it has been already discussed in examining the first position. I only entreat the attention of the Editor to the following assertions of Muhammad, known to almost all Musalmans who have the least knowledge of their own religion:

إن الله عزّوجلّ رحمة وهدي للعالمين

"Truly the great and glorious God raised me as *mercy* and *guidance* to *worlds*."

كنت أوّل النبيّين في الخلق واخرهم في البعث

"I *was the first* of all Prophets in creation and the last in appearance."

كنت نبياً وآدم في الماء والطين

"I was a Prophet when Adam was in earth and water."

انا سيّد المرسلين ولا فخر ليه

"I am the Lord of those that were sent by God. This is no boast to me."

انّما ظلّي على روس امّتي

"My shadow is on the head only of my followers."

من رآني فقد رأ اللّه

"He who has seen me has seen God."

من اطاعني فقد اطاع اللّه ومن عصاني فعصي اللّه

"He who has obeyed me, has obeyed God; and he who has sinned against me, has sinned against God."

It is, however, fortunate for Musalmans, that from want of familiarity and intimate connexion between the primitive Muhammadans and their contemporary heathens, the doctrines of Monotheism taught by Muhammad, and entertained by his followers have not been corrupted by polytheistical notions of Pagans, nor have heathen modes of worship or festivals been introduced among Musalmans of Arabia and Turkey as a part of their religion. Besides, metaphorical expressions having been very common among Oriental nations, Muhammadans could not fail to understand them in their proper sense, although these expressions may throw great difficulty in the way of an European Commentator even of profound learning.

CHAPTER IV.

Inquiry into the Doctrine of the Atonement.

ALL the texts collected by the Reverend Editor in his review from the authority of the divine Teacher, in favour of the second important doctrine of the cross, implying the vicarious sacrifice of Jesus as an atonement for the sins of mankind, are as follow: "I am the living bread which came down from heaven: if any man eat of this bread, he shall live for ever." "His giving his flesh for the life of the world." "I lay down my life for my sheep." "The Son of Man is come to give his life a ransom for many." Is any one of these passages I would ask, in the shape of an explicit commandment, or are they more than a mere statement of facts requiring figurative interpretation? For it is obvious that an attempt to take them in their direct sense, especially the first, ("I am the living bread;—if any man eat of this, &c.,") would amount to gross absurdity. Do they reasonably convey anything more than the idea, that Jesus was invested with a divine commission to deliver instructions leading to eternal beatitude, which whosoever should receive should live for ever? And that the Saviour, foreseeing that the imparting of those instructions would, by exciting the anger and enmity of the superstitious Jews, cause his life to be destroyed, yet hesitated not to persevere in their promulgation; as if a king, who hazards his life to procure freedom and peace for his subjects, were to address himself to them saying, "I lay down my life for you." This interpretation is fully confirmed by the following passages.—*Luke*, ch. iv. ver. 43: "And he said unto them I must preach the kingdom of God to other cities also; *for therefore am I sent.*" Ch. ii. vers 47—49: "And all that heard him were astonished at his understanding and answers. And when they (his parents) saw him, they were amazed: and his mother said unto him, Son, why hast thou thus dealt with us? Behold, thy father and I have sought thee sorrowing. And he said unto them, How is it that ye sought me? wist ye not that *I must be about my Father's business?*" Wherein Jesus declares, that the sole object of his mission was to preach and impart divine instructions. Again, after having instructed his disciples in the divine law and will, as appears from the following text, "For I have given unto them the words which thou gavest me; and

they have received them, and have known surely that I came out from thee, and they have believed that thou didst send me." (*John*, ch. xvii. ver. 8.) Jesus in his communion with God manifests that he had completed the object of his mission by imparting divine commandments to mankind: "I have glorified thee on the earth, I *have finished the work which thou gavest me to do*." Had his death on the cross been the work, or part of the work, for the performance of which Jesus was sent into this world he, as the founder of truth, would not have declared himself to have finished that work prior to his death.

That Jesus should ride on a colt, should receive an offer of vinegar to drink, and should be wounded with a spear after he had delivered up the ghost, as well as his death on the cross, were events prophesied in the Old Testament, and consequently these were fulfilled by Jesus. *Vide Luke*, ch xxiv. vers. 26 and 27: "Ought not Christ to have suffered these things, and to enter into his glory? And beginning at Moses and all the Prophets, he expounded unto them in all the scriptures the things concerning himself." But we are unhappily at a loss to discover any other design in each of these events, which happened to Jesus before his ascent to heaven. I am therefore sorry that I must plead my inability to make a satisfactory reply to the question of the Editor, "Had ever Jesus transgressed his heavenly Father's will, that he underwent such afflictions?" I can only say, that we find in the Scriptures that several other Prophets in common with Jesus suffered great afflictions, and some even death, as predicted. But I know not whether those afflictions were the consequences of the sins committed by them or by their parents, or whether these distresses were experienced by them through some divine purpose unknown to us; as some scriptural authorities shew beyond doubt, that man may be made liable to suffering for some secret divine purpose, without his or his parents having perpetrated any remarkable crime. (*John*, ch. ix ver. 3: "Jesus answered, Neither hath this man sinned nor his parents; but that the works of God should be made manifest in him.") The latter alternative (namely that the righteous Prophets suffered afflictions and even death for some divine purpose, known thoroughly to God alone) seems more consistent with the contents of the sacred writings, such as follow: *Mark*, ch. xii. vers. 1—9: "And he began to speak unto them by parables. A certain man planted a vineyard, and set a hedge about it, and digged a place for the wine fat, and built a

tower, and let it out to husbandmen, and went into a far country. And at the season he sent to the husbandmen a servant, that he might receive from the husbandmen of the fruit of the vineyard. And they caught him, and beat him, and sent him away empty. And again he sent unto them another servant; and at him they cast stones, and wounded him in the head, and sent him away shamefully handled. And again he sent another; and him they killed, and many others; beating some, and killing some. Having yet therefore one Son, his well-beloved, he sent him also last unto them, saying, They will reverence my Son. But these husbandmen said among themselves, This is the heir; come, let us kill him, and the inheritance shall be ours. And they took him, and killed him and cast him out of the vineyard. What shall therefore the Lord of the vineyard do? He will come and destroy the husbandmen, and will give the vineyard unto others." *John*, ch. xv. vers. 21, 22: "But all these things will they do unto you for my name's sake, because they know not him that sent me. If I had not come and spoken unto them, they had not had sin: but now they have no cloak for their sin." This parable and these passages give countenance to the idea, that God suffered his Prophets, and Jesus, his beloved Son, to be cruelly treated and slain by the Jews for the purpose of taking away every excuse that they might offer for their guilt.

In explaining the objects of Jesus' death on the cross, the Editor confidently assumes, that "If we view Jesus Christ as atoning for the sins of men, we have every thing perfectly in character: he became incarnate to accomplish that which could have been effected by neither men nor angels." I should therefore wish to know whether Jesus, whom the Editor represents as God incarnate, suffered death and pain for the sins of men in his divine nature, or in his human capacity? The former must be highly inconsistent with the nature of God, which, we are persuaded to believe by reason and tradition, is above being rendered liable to death or pain; since the difference we draw between God and the objects that are not God, is, that one cannot be subjected to death or termination, and the other is finite and liable to mortality. That the effects of Christ's appearance on earth, whether with respect to the salvation or condemnation of mankind, were finite, and therefore suitable to the nature of a finite being to accomplish, is evident from the fact, that to the present time millions of human beings are daily passing through the world,

whom the doctrines he taught have never reached, and who of course must be considered as excluded from the benefit of his having died for the remission of their sins. The latter, namely, that Jesus suffered death and pain in his human capacity as an atonement for the offences of others, seems totally inconsistent with the justice ascribed to God, and even at variance with those principles of equity required of men ; for it would be a piece of gross iniquity to afflict one innocent being, who had all the human feelings, and who had never transgressed the will of God, with the death of the cross, for the crimes committed by others. especially when he declares such great aversion to it, as is manifest from the following passages. *Matthew*, ch. xxvi. vers. 37, 39, 42, and 43 : " And he took with him Peter and the two sons of Zebedee, and began to be sorrowful and very heavy. And prayed, saying, O my Father, if it be possible, let this cup (meaning death) pass from me : nevertheless, not as I will, but as thou wilt. He went away again the second time, and prayed, saying, O my Father, if this cup may not pass away from me, except I drink it, thy will be done." *Mark*, ch. xiv. ver. 36 : " And he said, Abba, Father, all things are possible unto thee ; take away this cup from me ; nevertheless, not what I will, but what thou wilt." *Luke*, ch. xxii. vers 42 and 44 : " Saying, Father, if thou be willing, remove this cup from me : nevertheless, not my will, but thine, be done. And being in an agony, he prayed more earnestly : and his sweat was as it were great drops of blood, falling down to the ground." *John*, ch. xii. ver. 27 : " Now is my soul troubled ; and what shall I say? Father, save me from this hour : but for this cause came I unto this hour." Do not these passages evidently shew, that Jesus in his human capacity (according to the Trinitarian phrase) felt averse to death and pain, and that he earnestly prayed that he might not be subjected to it? Jesus, however, knowing that the will of the Father rendered such death unavoidable, yielded to it as predicted. *John*, ch. xi. vers. 17 and 18 : " Therefore doth my Father *love me* because *I lay down my life* that I might take it again : no *man* taketh it from me, but I lay it down of myself ; I have power to lay it down, and I have power to take it : *again* this *commandment have I received of my Father.*" *Matthew*, ch. xxvi. vers. 53 and 54 : " Thinkest thou that I cannot now pray to my Father, and He shall presently give me more than twelve legions of angels? But how then shall the Scripture be fulfilled, that thus it must be?" The iniquity of one's being

sentenced to death as an atonement for the fault committed by another is so palpable, that although in many countries the human race think themselves justified in detaining the persons of those men who, voluntarily making themselves responsible for the debt or the persons of others, fail to fulfil their engagements; nevertheless every just man amongthem would shudder at the idea of one's being put to death for a crime committed by another, even if the innocent man should willingly offer his life in behalf of that other.

In endeavouring to prove Jesus's atonement for sin by his death, the Reverend Editor urges, "Is he called the Saviour of men because he gave them moral precepts, by obeying which they might obtain the divine favour, with the enjoyment of heaven as their just desert? or, because he died in their stead to atone for their sins and procure for them every blessing, &c.? If Jesus be termed a Saviour merely because he instructed men, he has this honor in common with Moses, and Elijah and John the Baptist, neither of whom however assumed the title of Saviour." We find the title "Saviour" applied frequently in the divine writings to those persons who had been endued with the power of saving people, either by inculcating doctrines, or affording protection to them, although none of them atoned for the sins of mankind by their death. *Obadiah*, ver. 21: "And *saviours* shall come up on mount Zion to judge the mount of Esau; and the kingdom shall be the Lord's." *Nehemiah*, ch. ix. ver. 27: "And according to thy manifold mercies thou gavest them *saviours*, Who saved them out of the hand of their enemies" 2 *Kings* ch. xiii. ver. 5: "The Lord gave Israel a *saviour*, so that they went out from under the hand of the Syrians." How could, therefore, the Editor, a diligent student of the Bible, lay such a stress upon the application of the term "Saviour" to Jesus, as to adduce it as a proof of the doctrine of the atonement; especially when Jesus himself declares frequently, that he saved the people solely through the inculcation of the word of God? *John*, ch. xv, ver. 3: "Now ye are clean through the word which I have spoken unto you." Ch. v. ver. 24: "He that heareth my word and believeth on him that sent me, hath everlasting life." Ch. vi. ver. 63: "The words that I speak unto you, they are spirit, and they are life:"—wherein Jesus represents himself as a Saviour, or a distributor of eternal life, in his capacity of divine teacher.

Jesus is of course justly termed and esteemed a Saviour, for having instructed men in the Divine will and law, never before so fully

revealed. Would it degrade Jesus to revere him as a Divine Teacher, because Moses and the Prophets before him delivered to the people divine instructions? Or would it depreciate the dignity of Jesus, to believe that he, in common with several other prophets, underwent afflictions and death? Such an idea is indeed unscriptural, for God represents the Christ as a Prophet equal to Moses, (*Deut.* ch. xviii. ver. 18.) Jesus declares himself to have come to fulfil the law taught by Moses: (*Matthew*, ch. v. ver. 7.) "Think not that I am come to destroy the Law and the Prophets, I am not come to destroy, but to fulfil;" and strictly commands his disciples and the people at large to obey whatever Moses had taught. Ch. xxiii vers. 2, 3: "Saying, the Scribes and Pharisees sit in Moses' seat: all therefore whatsoever they bid you observe, that observe and do; but do not ye after their works: for they say, and do not."

I am sorry that I cannot, without offending my conscience, agree with the Reverend Editor in the opinion, that "If Jesus be esteemed merely a teacher, the greater degree of honour must be given to Moses, for it was in reality his law that Jesus explained and established."

It is true that Moses began to erect the everlasting edifice of true religion, consisting of a knowledge of the unity of God, and obedience to his will and commandments; but Jesus of Nazareth has completed the structure, and rendered his law perfect. To convince the Editor of this fact, I beg to call his attention to the following instances, found even in a single chapter, as exhibiting the perfection to which Jesus brought the Law given by Moses and other Prophets. *Matthew*, ch. v. vers. 21, 22: "Ye have heard that it was said by them of old time, Thou shalt not kill; and whosoever shall kill shall be in danger of the judgment: but I say unto you, That whosoever is angry with his brother without a cause shall be in danger of the judgment: and whosoever shall say to his brother, Raca, shall be in danger of the council: but whosoever shall say, Thou fool, shall be in danger of hell fire." Vers. 27, 28: "Ye have heard that it was said by them of old time, Thou shalt not commit adultery: but I say unto you, that whosoever looketh on a woman to lust after her, hath committed adultery." Vers. 31, 32: "It hath been said, whosoever shall put away his wife, let him give her a writing of divorcement: but I say unto you, That whosoever shall put away his wife, saving for the cause of fornication, causeth her to commit adultery." Vers. 38, 39: "Ye have heard that it hath been said An eye for an eye, and

a tooth for a tooth; but I say unto you that ye resist not evil: but whosoever shall smite thee on thy right cheek, turn to him the other also." Vers. 43—45. "Ye have heard that it hath been said, Thou shalt love thy neighbour, and hate thine enemy: but I say unto you, Love your enemies, bless them that curse you, do good to them that hate you, and pray for them that despitefully use you, and persecute you: that ye may be the children of your Father which is in heaven: for he maketh his sun to rise on the evil and on the good and sendeth rain on the just and on the unjust." Now I hope I may be justified in expressing my belief, (though it varies from the declaration made by the Editor,) that no *greater* honour can be justly given to any teacher of the will of God, than what is due to the *author* of the doctrines just quoted, which, with a power no less than standing miracles could produce, carry with them proofs of their divine origin to the conviction of the high and low, the learned and unlearned.

The Editor, in page 101, lays much stress on circumstances, the very minuteness of which, he thinks, "serves to enhance their value as testimonies." He alludes to the epithet "Lamb Godof" having been twice applied to Jesus by John the Baptist, two of whose disciples were thereby induced to become followers of Jesus. This is considered by the Editor as implying an admission on the part of Christ, that as a lamb, particularly the Paschal Lamb, was used in sacrifice as an atonement for sins, he also came into the world to sacrifice his life as an atonement for sin. We find, however, the term "lamb," as well as "sheep" applied in other places, where no allusion to the sacrificial lamb can be well imagined, and from which we infer that these were epithets generally applied to innocence subjected to persecution; a meaning which sufficiently accords with the use of the word lamb in the instance in question. We have those terms applied by Jesus to his disciples in *John*, ch. xxi. vers. 15—17, where he commands Simon Peter "to feed his lambs," "to feed his sheep;" and in ch. x. vers. 26, 27, "Ye believe not because ye are not of my sheep."—"My sheep hear my voice." Now, many of the Apostles suffered death in consequence of their endeavours to withdraw men from sin; but the Editor will not thence, I presume, maintain, though it follow from his argument, that the term "lamb" was applied to them, to shew that, by their death, they also atoned for the sins of mankind. The Reverend Editor might have spared the arguments he has adduced to prove, that Jesus was sent into

this world as the long-expected Messiah, intended to suffer death and difficulties like other prophets who went before him; as the Editor may find in the compilation in question, as well as in its defence, Jesus of Nazareth represented as "The Son of God," a term synonymous with that of Messiah, the highest of all the prophets; and his life declares him to have been, as represented in the Scriptures, pure as light, innocent as a lamb, necessary for eternal life as bread for a temporal one, and great as the angels of God, or rather greater than they. He also might have omitted to quote such authority as shews, that Christ, being a mediator between God and men, "declared that whatsoever they (his Apostles) shall ask in his name, the Father will give them;" for the Compiler, in his defence of the Precepts of Jesus, repeatedly acknowledged Christ as the Redeemer, Mediator, and Intercessor with God, in behalf of his followers. But such intercession does not, I presume, tend to a proof of the deity or the atonement of Jesus, as interpreted by the Editor; for God is represented in the sacred books to have often shewn mercy to mankind for righteous men's sakes; how much more, then, would he naturally manifest his favour towards those who might petition him in the name of one whom he anointed and exalted over all creatures and prophets? *Gen.* ch. xxx. ver. 27: "I have learned by experience, that the Lord hath blessed me for thy sake." *Jeremiah*, ch. xxvii. ver. 18. "But if they be Prophets, and if the word of the Lord be with them, let them now make intercession to the Lord of hosts." Moreover, we find angels declared to have been endued with the power of pardoning and redeeming men on various occasions. *Genesis*, ch. xlviii. ver. 16: "The Angel which redeemed me from all evil, bless the lads!" *Exodus*, ch. xxiii. vers. 20, 21: "Behold, I send an Angel before thee, to keep thee in the way, and to bring thee into the place which I have prepared. Beware of him, and obey his voice, provoke him not; for he will not pardon your transgressions: for my name is in him."

With regard to this doctrine, I have carefully noticed every argument advanced by the Editor, from the authority of Jesus himself in its support; and have adduced such arguments as may be used by those that reject that doctrine, and which they rest on the authority of the same Divine Teacher; leaving the decision of the subject to the discreet judgment of the public, by declining to deliver any opinion, as an individual, as to the merits thereof.

CHAPTER V.

On the doctrines and miraculous narrations of the New Testament.

I REGRET that the Editor should have accused the Compiler of having charged "on the dogmas or doctrines of Christianity those wars and that bloodshed which have occurred between nations merely termed Christians." The Compiler, in his defence of the precepts of Jesus, has ascribed such disputes and contentions not to anything contained in the Scriptures, but to the different interpretations of dogmas, which he esteemed not essential for salvation. In order to convince the Editor of the accuracy of my assertion, I entreat his attention to page 18, line 22, and page 22, line 24, of my defence of the compiled Precepts, under the designation of "An Appeal to the Christian Public."

The Editor observes, that "wars and bloodshed existed before the promulgation of Christianity in the world; neither Christianity, therefore, nor its dogmas, created the causes of wars and bloodshed. They existed in the human mind long before its doctrines were published; and that quarrels and feuds between the Arians and the Orthodox in the fourth and fifth centuries were little more than struggles for power and wealth." Although human frailty and want of perfection in men are in fact esteemed as the first and original causes of their improper conduct and wicked deeds, yet in the ordinary acceptation of the term 'cause," good or evil acts are invariably attributed to their immediate motives, ascertained from circumstantial evidence; and these acts are consequently held to entitle their respective agents to praise or reproach. But as the motives of actions and secrets of the human heart are in truth known to God alone, it is indeed beyond my power to establish in a satisfactory manner, that the majority of the primitive Arians and Trinitarians were excited by their mistaken religious zeal to slay each other, and not by a desire of power and worldly advancement. I would appeal, however, to the Editor himself, whether it would not be indeed very illiberal to suppose, that almost all the Christian world should for a period of two hundred years have been weak or wicked enough to engage wilfully in causing the blood of each other to be shed under the cloak of religion, and merely for worldly motives. But as this must

be a matter of opinion, I beg to shew that which has been entertained on the subject by one of the highest authorities, against the Trinitarians, who have written on the history of Christianity. I allude to Dr. Mosheim, whose words I here give, and I entreat my readers to draw their own inferences from them:

Volume I, p. 419: "After the death of Constantine the Great, one of his sons, Constantius, who in the division of the empire became ruler of the East, was warmly attached to the Arian party, whose principles were also zealously adopted by the Empress, and indeed by the whole court. On the other hand, Constantine-and Constans, Emperors of the West, maintained the decrees of the Council of Nice throughout all the provinces where their jurisdiction extended.—Hence arose endless animosities and seditions, treacherous plots, and open acts of injustice and violence between the two contending parties; Council was assembled against Council, and their jarring and contradictory decrees spread perplexity and confusion throughout the Christian world." Page 420: "His (Gratian's) zeal for their interest, though fervent and active, was surpassed by that of his successor, Theodosius the Great, who raised the secular arm against the Arians with a terrible degree of violence, drove them from their churches, and enacted laws whose severity exposed them to the greatest calamities." It is difficult to conceive what other motives than those of mistaken zeal for a particular doctrine could have influenced the mind of an Emperor like Theodosius to such acts of cruelty and violence: but however that may be, it is obvious that if such a mode of interpreting conduct be adopted, it is difficult to say where we are to stop. The devotion even of the Apostles and Martyrs of Christianity may be attributed to a pursuit after power over the minds and respect in the eyes of men, and all distinction of good and evil character be considered as futile and without foundation. With respect to the final success of the Trinitarian party, it appears to me the event naturally to have been expected. For, to the people of those ages, doctrines that resembled the polytheistical belief that till then prevailed, must have been more acceptable than those which were diametrically opposed to such notions. The idea of a God in human form was easy and familiar: Emperors and Empresses had altars raised to them even during their lives and after death were enrolled as divinities. Perhaps too, something may justly be attributed to a certain degree of pride and satisfaction in the idea, that

the religion they had begun to profess was dictated immediately by the Deity himself, rather than by any subordinate agency. There had not been among the Heathens any class of mankind to whom they were accustomed to look up with that devotion familiarly entertained by the Jews towards Moses and their Prophets, and they were consequently ready to elevate to a God any being who rose in their estimation above the level of mankind.

The violence and outrages which Roman Catholics and Protestants have experienced from each other, were not of course, as observed by the Reverend Editor, owing, in their origin, to the adoption of different interpretations respecting the deity of Christ or of the Holy Ghost; but they were the immediate consequences of the different sentiments they have held with respect to the doctrine of an exclusive power of granting absolution, and leading to eternal life, being vested in St. Peter and his successors. What great mischief has however been produced, and how many lives have from time to time been destroyed, from the difference of sentiments held by the parties with regard to this doctrine, which even the Editor himself does not deem an essential point of religion!

The Editor, in p. 114, argues, as a proof of the importance of the Gospel, that Christ taught them, fully foreseeing that they would be the subject of dispute; and quotes his saying, that he came not to send peace on the earth, but a sword. The whole of the 10th chap. of Matthew, from which the Editor quotes the passage here alluded to, consists of the instructions delivered by Jesus to the twelve Apostles, when he sent them forth to preach the kingdom of heaven to the lost sheep of the house of Israel; but has no allusion, that I can perceive, to eternal dissension amongst those who were already or might afterwards become Christians. That Jesus foresaw, as one of the primary effects of preaching his Gospel, that great dissensions would arise—that he was aware that the great question of confessing him to be the Messiah or not would be as a sword between a man and his father, the daughter and her mother, and the daughter-in-law and her mother-in-law, is evident. But this seems to me by no means to prove that Jesus, as supposed by the Editor, "longed or almost longed" to see a fire kindled in the earth respecting doctrines not essential to the salvation of mankind. Nor would it have been any reason for suppressing the most trivial of his sayings, that priestcraft working on the ignorance and superstition, the bigotry or intolerance

of mankind, should have wrested his words to evil purposes.—As observed by the Editor himself, the mischief lay originally in human nature, not in any part of the doctrines of Christ; but as those dissensions are now perpetuated principally by education, a cause essentially distinct from their origin, the case is entirely altered. The corruption of the human heart cannot be totally removed; but the evil effects that spring from human institutions may be avoided, when their real sources are known. After the secret and immediate causes of persecution have passed away, the differences of opinion which have been the declared grounds of hostility are handed down by the teachers of different sects; and, as already repeatedly avowed, it was with the view of evading, not those questions concerning which Jesus spoke and which distinguish his followers from all others, but those which have from time to time been seized upon to excite enmities still existing amongst fellow Christians, that the Compiler confined himself to those Precepts, concerning which all mankind must be of one accord.

As to the question of the Editor, "It can scarcely be unknown to the Compiler, that the very being of a God has been for numerous ages the subject of dispute among the most learned of his own country; does he account this a sufficient reason for suppressing this doctrine? We know that he does not. Why then should he omit the doctrines of Christ and his Apostles, because men have made them the subject of dispute?" For a direct answer to this question, I beg to refer the Reverend Editor to the Appeal of the Compiler, page 27, wherein he will find that he assigns not one, but two circumstances, as concurring to form the motive of his having omitted certain doctrines of Christianity in his selection—1st, that they are the subject of disputes and contention—2ndly, that they are not essential to religion. It is therefore obvious, that the analogy between the omission of certain dogmas, and that of the being of a God, has been unfairly drawn by the Editor. Admitting that the doctrines of Christianity and the existence of a God are equally liable to disputes, it should be recollected that the former are, in the estimation of the Compiler, not essential to religion; while the latter is acknowledged by him, in common with the professors of every faith, to be the foundation of all religion, as distinctly stated in his Introduction to the selected Precepts of Jesus. Every system of religion adopts the idea of a God, and avows this as its fundamental principle, though

they differ from one another in representing the nature and attributes of the Deity. The Compiler therefore could have no motive for suppressing the doctrine of the being of a God, though disputed by a few pretended literary men; and he has consequently never hesitated to inculcate with all his power the idea of one God to the learned and unlearned of his own country, taking care at the same time, as much as possible, not to enter into particulars as to the real nature, essence, attributes, person, or substance of the Godhead, those being points above his comprehension, and liable to interminable disputes. The Reverend Editor thus expresses his surprise at the conduct of the Compiler, in omitting in his selection the miraculous relations of the Gospel:—"We cannot but wonder that his miracles should not have found greater favour in the eyes of the Compiler of this selection, while the amazing weight which Jesus himself attached to them could scarcely have escaped his notice:" and in order to prove the importance of the miracles ascribed to Jesus, the Editor quotes three instances, in the first of which Jesus referred John the Baptist to his wonderful miracles; in the second, he called the attention of unbelieving Jews to his miraculous works as a proof of his divine mission; in the third, he recommends Philip the Apostle to the evidence of his miracles. But after a slight attention to the circumstances in which those appeals were made, it appears clearly, that in these and other instances Jesus referred to his miracles those persons only who either *scrupled to believe*, or doubted him as the promised Messiah, or required of him some sign to confirm their faith. *Vide Matthew.* ch. xi. vers. 2—4: "When John had heard in the prison the works of Christ, he sent two of his disciples, and said unto him, Art thou he that should come, or do we *look for another?* Jesus answered and said unto them, Go and shew John those things which ye do here and see." *John*, ch. x. vers. 37 and 38, Jesus says to those Jews who accused him of blasphemy, "If I do not the works of my Father, believe me not. But *if I do*, though ye believe not me, *believe the works.*" In reply to the request of Philip, who, being discontented with the doctrines Jesus inculcated, said, "Lord, shew us the Father, and it sufficeth us; Jesus answered and said, "Believe me, that I am in the Father and the Father in me, *or else* believe me for the very works' sake." (*John*, ch. xiv. ver. 11.) Jesus even speaks in terms of reproach of those that seek for miracles for their conviction as to his divine mission. *Matthew*, ch. xii, ver. 39: "But he answered and said

unto them, An evil and adulterous generation seeketh after a sign." Moreover he blesses them, who, without having recourse to the proofs of miracles, profess their belief on him. *John*, ch. xx. ver. 29: "Jesus said unto him, Thomas, because thou hast seen me thou hast believed; *blessed are they that have not seen, and yet have believed.*"

Under these circumstances, and from the experience that nothing but the sublimity of the Precepts of Jesus had at first drawn the attention of the Compiler himself towards Christianity, and excited his veneration for the author of this religion, without aid from miraculous relations, he omitted in his compilation the mention of the miracles performed by Jesus, without meaning to express doubts of their authenticity, or intending to slight them by such an omission.

I regret, therefore, that the Editor should have suffered any part of his valuable time to be spent in advancing several arguments, in the concluding part of his Review, to establish the truth of the miraculous statements of the New Testament. But as this discussion applies to the evidence of miracles generally, it may be worth considering. Arguments adduced by the Editor amount to this: "If all social, political, mercantile, and judicial transactions be allowed to rest upon testimony; why should not the validity of Christian miracles be concluded from the testimony of the Apostles and others, and be relied upon by all the nations of the world?" The Editor must be well aware, that the enemies to revelation draw a line of distinction on the subject of proofs by testimony, between the current events of nature familiar to the senses of mankind, and within the scope of human exertions; and extraordinary facts beyond the limits of common experience, and ascribed to a direct interposition of divine power suspending the usual course of nature. If all assertions were to be indiscriminately admitted as facts, merely because they are testified by numbers, how can we dispute the truth of those miracles which are said to have been performed by persons esteemed holy amongst natives of this country? The Compiler has never placed the miracles related in the New Testament on a footing with the extravagant tales of his countrymen, but distinctly expressed his persuasion that they (Christian miracles) would be apt at best to carry little weight with those whose imaginations had been accustomed to dwell on narrations much more wonderful and supported by testimony which they have been taught to regard with a reverence that they cannot be expected all at once to bestow on the

Apostles. See Introduction to the Precepts, p. 5, and Appeal, p. 88. The very same line of argument, indeed, pursued by the Editor, would equally avail the Hindoos. Have they not accounts and records handed down to them, relating to the wonderful miracles stated to have been performed by their saints, such as Agastya, Vasishta, and Gotama; and their gods incarnate, such as Ram, Krishna, and Narsingh; in presence of their contemporary friends and enemies, the wise and the ignorant, the select and the multitude?—Could not the Hindoos quote in support of their narrated miracles, authorities from the histories of their most inveterate enemies the Jains, who join the Hindoos entirely in acknowledging the truth and credibility of their miraculous accounts? The only difference which subsists between these two parties on this subject, is, that the Hindoos consider the power of performing miracles given to their gods and saints by the Supreme Deity, and the Jains declare that they performed all those astonishing works by *Asuri Sakti*, or by demoniac power. Musalmans, on the other hand, can produce records written and testified by contemporaries of Muhammad, both friends and enemies, who are represented as eye-witnesses of the miracles ascribed to him; such as his dividing the moon into two parts, and working in sun-shine without casting a shadow. They can assert, too, that several of those witnesses suffered the greatest calamities, and some even death, in defence of that religion; some before the attempts of Muhammad at conquest, others after his commencing such attempts, and others after his death. On mature consideration of all those circumstances, the Compiler hopes he may be allowed to remain still of opinion, that the miraculous relations found in the divine writings would be apt at best to carry little weight with them, when imparted to the Hindoos at large, in the present state of their minds: but as no other religion can produce anything that may stand in competition with the precepts of Jesus, much less that can be pretended to be superior to them, the Compiler deemed it incumbent upon him to introduce these among his countrymen as a Guide to Peace and Happiness.

CHAPTER VI.

On the Impersonality of the Holy Spirit. Miscellaneous remarks.

I WILL now inquire into the justness of the conclusion drawn by the Editor, in his attempt to prove the Deity of the Holy Ghost, from the circumstance of his name being associated with that of the Father in the rite of Baptism. This subject is incidentally brought forward in the course of the arguments he has adduced respecting the nature of Jesus, where he observes "It is needless to add that this testimony of Jesus, (the associating of his own name and that of the Holy Ghost with the name of the Father,) is equally decisive respecting the Deity of the Holy Ghost." I have hitherto omitted to notice this question among other matters in review, reserving it for the express purpose of a distinct and separate examination. It seems to me, in the first place, rather singular, that the Reverend Editor, after having filled up many pages with numerous arguments in his endeavour to establish the Godhead of Jesus, should have noticed in so short and abrupt a manner, the question of the Deity of the Holy Ghost, although the Editor equally esteems them both as distinct persons of the Deity. I wonder, in the next place, how the learned Editor could suppose a mere association of names in a rite to be sufficient to prove the identity of their subjects. I am indeed sorry I cannot, without overlooking a great many scriptural authorities, and defying reason totally, join the Editor in the opinion, that the association of the name of the Holy Spirit with that of the Father of the Univesse, in the rite of Baptism, is "decisive of, or even allusive to, the separate personality of the Spirit."

2 *Chronicles*, ch. xx. ver. 20: "Jehoshaphat stood and said, Hear me, O Judah, and ye inhabitants of Jerusalem; believe in the Lord your God, so shall ye be established; believe his prophets, so shall ye prosper;" wherein the name of the Prophets of God is associated with that of the Deity himself in the profession of belief, which is considered by Christians of all denominations more essential than an external symbol of Christianity. Again, in *Jeremiah*, ch. xxx. ver. 9, "But they shall serve the Lord their God, and David their King, whom I will raise up unto them," the Lord joins his name with that of David in the act of religious service, which is in its

strictest sense esteemed due to God alone. Would it not therefore be unscriptural to make an attempt to prove the deity of the Prophets, or David, under the plea that their names are associated with that of God in religious observances? But we must do so, were we to follow the process of reasoning adopted by the Reverend Editor. The kind of evidence on which the Editor relies in this instance, would besides suit admirably the purposes of those who might seek in the sacred Scriptures grounds for justifying idolatry. Fire worshippers, for instance, insisting on the literal sense of the words, might refer to that text in the 3rd Chapter of Matthew, repeated in *Luke*, ch. iii. ver. 16, in which it is announced, that Jesus Christ will baptize with the Holy Ghost and with fire. If the association in the rite of Baptism of the names of the Son and Holy Ghost, with that of the Father, proves their divinity; it is clear that fire also being associated with the Holy Ghost in the same rite, must likewise be considered as a part of the Godhead

God is invariably represented in revelation as the main object of belief, receiving worship and prayers that proceed from the heart through the first-born of every creature, the Messiah, ("No man cometh unto the Father but by me.' *John*, ch. xiv. ver. 6,) and leading such as worship him in spirit to righteous conduct, and ultimately to salvation, through his guiding influence which is called the Holy Spirit, ("when he the Spirit of truth is come he will guide you into all truth," *John*, ch. xvi. ver. 13.) There is therefore a moral obligation on those who avow the truth of such revelation to profess their belief in God as the sole object of worship, and in the Son through whom they, as Christians, should offer divine homage, and also in the Holy influence of God, from which they should expect direction in the path of righteousness, as the consequence of their sincere prayer and supplication. For the same reason also, in publicly adopting this religion, it is proper that those who receive it should be baptized in the name of the Father, who is the object of worship; of the Son, who is the mediator; and of that influence by which spiritual blessings are conveyed to mankind, designated in the Scriptures as the Comforter, Spirit of truth, or Holy Spirit. As God is declared through his Holy Spirit to have led to righteousness such as sought heartily his will, so he is equally represented to have through wrath afflicted rebels against his authority, and to have prospered through his infinite mercy those who manifested obedience to him; as appears from the following

passages:—2 *Kings*, ch. xxiv. 20, "For through the *anger* of the Lord it came to pass in Jerusalem, until he had cast them out from his presence." *Psalm*, ch. xc. ver. 7, "For we are consumed by thine *anger*, and by the *wrath* are we troubled." *Psalm*, ch. xxi ver. 7, "And through the *mercy* of the most High he shall not be moved." *Psalm*, ch. vi. ver. 4, "Return, O Lord, deliver my soul: O save me for thy *mercy's* sake." Nor can we legitimately infer the idea of the self-existence or distinct personality of the Holy Ghost, from such metaphorical language as the following, "The Holy Ghost shall teach you," *Luke*, ch. xiii. ver. 12. "The Holy Ghost is come upon you," *Acts*, ch. i. ver. 8. "The Comforter, who is the Holy Ghost, whom the Father will send," *John*, ch. xiv. ver. 26. For we find expressions of a similar nature applied to other attributes of God, personifying them equally with the Holy Spirit. *Psalm*, ch. lvii. ver. 3: "God shall *send* forth *mercy* and his *truth*.", lxxxv. ver. 10: "*Mercy* and *truth* are *met* together." Ch. c. ver 5: "The Lord is good, his *mercy* is *everlasting*." Ch. xxxiii. ver. 22: "Let thy *mercy* O Lord, be upon us." Ch xxxvi. ver. 5: "Thy *mercy* O Lord, is in the heavens." Ch. cviii. ver 4: "For thy *mercy* is great above the heavens." *Ezek.*, ch. vii. ver. 3: "I will *send* my *anger* upon thee." 2 *Chronicles*, ch. xxiv, ver. 18, "*Wrath* came upon Judah for this trespass."

Were every attribute ascribed to the Deity, which is found personified, to be therefore considered as a distinct personage, it would be difficult to avoid forming a very strange notion of the theology of the Bible. It appears, indeed, to me impossible to view the Holy Spirit as very God, without coming to ideas respecting the nature of the Deity, little different from some of those most generally and justly condemned as found amongst Polytheists. Take, for instance, *Matthew*, ch. i. ver. 11, where it is said, that Mary was found with child of the Holy Ghost. Ver. 20: "That which is conceived in her, is of the Holy Ghost." *Luke*, ch. . ver. 35: "The Holy Ghost shall come upon thee, and the power of the Highest shall overshadow thee." In interpreting these passages according to the opinion maintained by the Editor, we should necessarily be drawn to the idea that God came upon Mary, and that the child which she bore was in reality begotten of him.—Is this idea, I would beg to know, consistent with the perfect nature of the righteous God? Or rather, is not such a notion of the Godhead's having had intercourse with a human female, as horrible as the sentiments entertained by ancient and modern Heathens respecting

the Deity? On the other hand if we understand by those passages, merely that the miraculous influence of God came upon Mary, so that, though a virgin, she bore a child, everything would stand consistent with our belief of the Divine power, without shocking our ideas of the purity of the Deity, inculcated alike by reason and revelation. This mode of interpretation, is, indeed, confirmed by the very passage of *Luke* above quoted, "The power of the Highest shall overshadow thee;" plainly and simply declaring, that it was the power of God which gave birth to the child, contrary to the ordinary course of nature. If by the term "Holy Ghost" be meant a third distinct person of the Godhead, equal in power and glory with the Father of all, I am at a loss to know what Trinitarians understand by such expressions as the following: *Matthew*, ch. iii. ver. 11, and *Luke*, ch. iii. ver. 16: "He shall baptize you with the Holy Ghost and with fire." *Acts*, ch. x. ver. 38: "God anointed Jesus of Nazareth with the Holy Ghost and with power." *Matthew*, ch. xii. ver 28: "I cast out devils by the Spirit of God." Ver. 31: "All manner of sin and blasphemy shall be forgiven unto men: but the blasphemy against the Holy Ghost shall not be forgiven unto man. *Luke*, ch. iv. ver. 1: "And Jesus, being full of the Holy Ghost, returned from Jordan." If the term "Holy Ghost" be synonymous with the third person of the Godhead, and "Christ" with the second person, the foregoing passages may be read as follows: "He, the second person, shall baptize you with the third person, of the Godhead, and with fire." "God anointed Jesus of Nazareth, (the second person of the Godhead,) with the third person of the Godhead, and with power." "I (the second person of the Godhead) cast out devils by the third person of the Godhead." "All manner of sin and blasphemy, even against the first and second person of the Godhead shall be forgiven unto men; but blasphemy against the third person of the Godhead shall not be forgiven unto men." "Jesus, (the second person of the Godhead,) being full of the third person of the Godhead, returned from Jordan." But little reflection is, I should suppose, necessary to enable any one to perceive the inconsistency of such paraphrases as the foregoing, and the reasonableness of adopting the usual mode of scriptural interpretation of the original texts, according to which the foregoing passages may be understood as follows: "He shall baptize you with the spirit of truth and purity." "God anointed Jesus of Nazareth with his holy influence and power." "I cast out devils by

the influence of God." "All manner of sin and blasphemy, even against the Christ, the first-born of every creature, shall be forgiven to men; but blasphemy against the power of God shall not be forgiven unto men." "Jesus, being full of the influence of God, returned from Jordan." Still more dangerous to true religion would it be two interpret, according to the Trinitarian mode, the passages which describe the descent of the Holy Ghost upon Jesus on the occasion of his baptism. *Luke*, ch. iii. ver. 22: "And the Holy Ghost descended in a bodily shape like a dove upon him." For, if we believe that the Spirit, in the form of a dove or in any other *bodily shape*, was really the third person of the Godhead, how can we justly charge with absurdity the Hindoo legends of the Divinity having the form of a fish or of any other animal?

It ought to be remarked, with respect to the text above quoted, denouncing eternal wrath on those who blaspheme against the Holy Ghost, that the occasion on which the term was made use of by Christ was the accusation of the Jews, that his miracles were the effects of an influence of a nature directly opposite to that of God, namely, the power of Beelzebub, the Prince of Devils. The Jews alleged that he was possessed of an unclean or diabolical spirit, ("Because they said, He hath an unclean spirit:" *Mark*, ch. iii. ver. 30. "They *said*, This fellow doth not cast out devils, but by Beelzebub the prince of the devils," *Matthew*, ch. xii. ver. 24.) Jesus affirms, that the Spirit which enabled him to do those wonderful works was a holy Spirit: and that whatever language they might hold with respect to himself, blasphemy against that power by which he did those miracles would not be forgiven. "All manner of sins and blasphemy shall be forgiven unto men: but the blasphemy against the Holy Ghost shall not be forgiven unto men. And whosoever speaketh against the Son of Man, it shall be forgiven him: but whosoever speaketh against the Holy Ghost, it shall not be forgiven him, neither in this world, nor in the world to come."

Were the words "all manner of blasphemy," in the passage in question, received as including blasphemy against the Father, the term must be thus understood: "All manner of blasphemy against man and the Father, and even blasphemy against the Son, shall be forgiven; but blasphemy against the Holy Ghost must not be forgiven: and consequently the interpretation would amount to an admission of the superiority of the Son and the Holy Ghost to the Father, an

opinion which no sect of Christians has hitherto formed. In the above-quoted passage, therefore, the exception of the Holy Ghost must exclude blasphemy against the Father, and the whole should be thus interpreted :—All manner of blasphemy against men and angels, even against the first-born of every creature, shall be forgiven ; but blasphemy against the power of God, by which Jesus declared himself to have cast out devils, shall not be forgiven. For further illustration I quote here the whole passage of *Matthew*, ch. xii. vers. 24—37 : "But when the Pharisees heard it, they said, This fellow doth not cast out devils, but by Beelzebub, the prince of the devils. And Jesus knew their thoughts, and said unto them, Every kingdom divided against itself is brought to desolation ; and every city or house divided against itself shall not stand. And if Satan cast out Satan, he is divided against himself ; how shall then his kingdom stand ? And if I by Beelzebub cast out devils, by whom do your children cast them out ? therefore they shall be your judges. But if I cast out devils by the Spirit of God, then the kingdom of God is come unto you. Or else how can one enter into a strong man's house, and spoil his goods, except he first bind the strong man ? and then he will spoil his house. He that is not with me is against me ; and he that gathereth not with me, scattereth abroad Wherefore I say unto you, All manner of sin and blasphemy shall be forgiven unto men ; but the blasphemy against the Holy Ghost shall not be forgiven unto men. And whosoever speaketh a word against the Son of Man, it shall be forgiven him : but whosoever speaketh against the Holy Ghost, it shall not be forgiven him, neither in this world, neither in the world to come. Either make the tree good, and his fruit good ; or else make the tree corrupt, and his fruit corrupt : for the tree is known by his fruit. O generation of vipers, how can ye, being evil, speak good things ? for out of the abundance of the heart the mouth speaketh. A good man out of the good treasure of the heart bringeth forth good things : and an evil man out of the evil treasure bringeth forth evil things. But I say unto you, That every idle world that men shall speak, they shall give account thereof in the day of judgment. For by thy words thou shalt be justified, and by thy words thou shalt be condemned." *Mark*, ch. iii. vers 29, 30 : "But he that shall blaspheme against the Holy Ghost hath never forgiveness, but is in danger of eternal damnation : because they said, He hath an unclean spirit."

Is it not evident from the above authority of Jesus himself, that the term "Holy Ghost" is synonymous to the prevailing influence of God? And had not the power by which Jesus performed his miracles the same origin, and was it not of the same nature as that by which the children of Israel performed theirs? "If I by Beelzebub cast out devils, by whom do your children cast them out? therefore they shall be your judges." It may not be without use to notice here, that frequent instances are related in the Scriptures of the influence of the Spirit of God, in leading righteous men to truth, before Jesus had commenced the performance of his divine commission, and even before he had appeared in this world; in the same manner as it afterwards operated in guiding his true followers to the way of God, subsequent to his ascent to heaven, in consequence of his repeated intercession with the Father. This will fully appear from the following passages, *Luke*, ch. i. ver. 15: "And he (John the Baptist) shall be filled with the Holy Ghost, even from his mother's womb." Ver. 41: "And it came to pass, that when Elizabeth heard the salutation of Mary, the babe leaped in her womb; and Elizabeth was filled with the Holy Ghost." Ver. 67: "And his (John's) father Zacharias was filled with the Holy Ghost, and prophesied," &c. Ch. ii. vers. 25, 26: "And behold, there was a man in Jerusalem, whose name was Simeon: and the same man was just and devout, waiting for the consolation of Israel; and the Holy Ghost was upon him. And it was revealed unto him by the Holy Ghost, that he should not see death, before he had seen the Lord's Christ. And he came by the Spirit into the temple," *Mark*, ch. xii. ver. 36: "David himself said by the Holy Ghost, The Lord said to my Lord, Sit thou on my right hand, till I make thine enemies thy footstool." The Evangelist Matthew employs a similar expression, ch. xxii. 43: "How then doth David in spirit call him Lord?" *Luke*, ch. iv. ver. 1: "And Jesus being full of the Holy Ghost, returned from Jordan, and was led by the Spirit into the wilderness." It must not, therefore, be supposed, that the manifestation of this holy attribute of God is peculiar to the Christian dispensation. We find in the Scriptures the term "God" applied figuratively in a finite sense to Christ, and to some other superiors, as I have already noticed in page 130: a circumstance which may possibly have tended to confirm such as are rendered, from their early impressions, partial to the doctrine of the Trinity in their prepossessed notions of the deity of Jesus. But

with respect to the Holy Ghost I must confess my inability to find a single passage in the whole Scriptures, in which the Spirit is addressed as God, or as a person of God. so as to afford to believers of the Trinity an excuse for their profession of the Godhead of the Holy Ghost. The only autnorities they quote to this effect that I have met with are as follow: *Acts*, ch. v. vers 3, 4: "Peter said, Ananias, why hath Satan filled thine heart to lie to the Holy Ghost? Thou hast not lied unto men, but unto God." From which they conclude, He that lieth to the Holy Ghost lieth to God. *John*, ch. xv. ver. 26: "But when the Comforter is come whom I will send unto you from the Father, even the Spirit of truth, who proceedeth from the Father, he shall testify of me." As to the first of these texts, I need only remark, that any sin or blasphemy against one of the attributes of God is of course reckoned a sin or blasphemy against God himself. But this admission amounts neither to a recognition of the self-existence or the attribute, nor of its identity with God. With respect to the mission of the Spirit of truth as a proof of its being a separate existence, and not merely an expression for the influence of God, the passage in question, if so taken, would thus run: "But when God is come, whom I (God) will send unto you from God, even God who proceedeth from God, &c." Can there be an idea more polytheistical than what flows from these words? Yet those that maintain this interpretation express their detestation of Polytheism. If, with a view to soften the unreasonableness of this interpretation, they think themselves justified in having recourse to the term "mystery," they cannot, without injustice, accuse Hindoos, the believers of numerous gods under one Godhead, of absurdity, when they plead mystery in defence of their Polytheism; for, under the plea of mystery, every appearance of unreasonableness may be easily removed.

I find to my great surprise, that the plural form of expression in the 26th verse of the first chapter of Genesis, "And God said, Let us make man in our image, after our likeness," has been quoted by some divines as tending to prove the doctrine of the deity of the Holy Ghost, and that of the Son, with the deity of the Father of the Universe, commonly called the doctrine of the Trinity. It could scarcely be believed, if the fact were not too notorious, that such eminent scholars as some of those divines undoubtedly were, could be liable to such a mistake as to rely on this verse as a ground of argument in support of the Trinity. It shews how easily prejudice in

favour of an already acquired opinion gets the better of learning and how successfully it darkens the sphere of truth. Were we even to disregard totally the idiom of the Hebrew, Arabic, and of almost all Asiatic languages, in which the plural number is often used for the singular, to express the respect due to the persons denoted by the noun; and to understand the term, "our image" and "our likeness," found in the verse as conveying a plural meaning, the quotation would still by no means answer their purpose; for the verse in question would in that case imply a plurality of Gods, without determining whether their number was three or three hundred, and of course without specifying their persons.—No middle point in the unlimited series of number being determined, it would be almost necessary for the purpose of obtaining some fixed number as implied by those terms, to adopt either two, the lowest degree of plurality in the first personal pronoun both in Hebrew and Arabic, or to take the highest number of Gods with which human imagination has peopled the heavens. In the former case, the verse cited might countenance the doctrine of the duality of the Godhead entertained by Zirdusht and his followers, representing the God of goodness and the God of evil to have jointly created man, composed of a mixed nature of good and evil propensities: in the latter it would be consistent with the Hindoo system of religion; but there is nothing in the words that can be with any justice construed as pointing to the Trinity. These are not the only difficulties attending the interpretation of those terms:—if they should be viewed in any other than a singular sense, they would involve contradiction with the very next verse: "So God created man in his own image," in which the singular number is distinctly used; and in *Deut.* ch. iv. ver. 4: "The Lord our God is one Lord;" and also with the spirit of the whole of the Old Testament.

To those who are tolerably versed in Hebrew and Arabic, (which is only refined Hebrew,) it is a well-known fact that in the Jewish and Muhammadan scriptures, as well as in common discourse, the plural form is often used in a singular sense, when the superiority of the subject of discourse is intended to be kept in view: this is sufficiently apparent from the following quotations taken both from the Old Testament in Hebrew, and from the Qoran. *Exodus*, ch. xxi. ver. 4, in the original Hebrew Scripture אֲדֹנָיו יִתֶּן לוֹ אִשָּׁה וְיָלְדָה "If his masters (meaning his master) have given him a wife."

Ver. 6th Hebrew, וְדָנוּ שְׁנֵי אֲדוֹנָיו אֵל הָאֱלֹהִים "Then his masters (that is, his master) shall bring him unto the Judges." Verse 29th, וְאִם שׁוֹר נָגָח הוּא מִתְמֹל שִׁלְשֹׁם וְהוּעַד בִּבְעָלָיו "But if the ox were wont to push with his horn in time past, and it has been testified to his owners" (that is to his owner.)—*Isaiah*, ch. vi. ver. 8: Hebrew, אֵת מִי אֶשְׁלַח וְמִי יֵלֵךְ לָנוּ "To whom shall I send? and who will go for us?" (that is, for me.)

So also in the Qoran, نحن اقرب من حبل الوريد "We are (meaning am) I nearer than the jugular vein." انا خلقناه بقدر "Surely we (meaning I) created every thing in proportion. In these two texts of the Qoran, God is represented to have spoken in the plural number, although Muhammad cannot be supposed to have employed a mode of expression which he could have supposed capable of being considered favourable to the Trinity.

But what are we to think of such reasoning as that which finds a confirmation of the doctrine of the Trinity in the thrice repeated term "holy," in verse 3, ch. vi. of *Isaiah*? Following this mode of argument, the repetitions of the term "Eli, Eli." or "My God, My God," by Jesus in his human nature, in *Matthew*, ch. xxvii. ver. 46, equally establishes the duality of the Godhead. So also the holy name of the Supreme Deity being composed of four letters, in the Hebrew, יְהוָה; in Greek, Θεός; in Latin, Deus; in Arabic, الله; and in Sanscrit, ॐ, clearly denotes the quadrality of the Godhead!! But these and all similar modes of argument that have been resorted to, are worthy of notice only as they serve to exhibit the extraordinary force of prejudice and superstition.

The most extraordinary circumstance is, that some should quote in support of the Trinity the following sentence: "For there are three that bear record in heaven, the Father, the Word, and the Holy Ghost, and these three are one," representing it as the 7th verse, ch. v. of the first epistle of John. This is supposed to have been at first composed as a paraphrase upon what stands as ver. 8 of the same chapter, ("and there are three that bear witness in earth, the Spirit, and the water, and the blood; and these three agree in one,") and met with approbation. It was, however, for a length of time, known only in oral circulation; but was afterwards placed in the margin of some editions, and at last introduced into the text, most

probably in the fifteenth century, as an original verse. From that time it has been the common practice to insert this verse amongst those which are collected in support of the Trinitarian doctrine. It may have served in this way to confirm and strengthen prejudice, though few biblical critics ever attached the smallest value to it either way. This interpretation is so modern, and so obvious, that several Trinitarian Editors and commentators of the Bible, such as Griesbach and Michaelis, (who never allowed their zeal for their sect to overcome the prudence and candour with which they were endowed,) have omitted to insert it in their late works on the New Testament; knowing, perhaps, that such an interpolation, so far from strengthening the doctrine they maintain, has excited great doubts as to the accuracy of other passages generally relied upon for its support.

We have already, I trust, seen distinctly that none of the lessons taught by Christ to his disciples teach us to believe in him as God; but as most Trinitarian authors assert that his doctrine was fully revealed by his Apostles speaking under the inspiration of the Holy Ghost, it may be worth while to examine whether it be included by them amongst the doctrines of the Christian religion. This question may be immediately determined by referring to the history of the words of the Apostles; for if the doctrine of the Trinity had been considered by them as an essential part of what they were commanded the teach, we should certainly find it insisted upon in the discourses of addressed to their converts. But we shall look in vain for any impression amongst those reported by Luke, that indicates the profess- teach of such a belief by the Apostles themselves; far less that they collected an acknowledgment of its truth from those whom they admitted by the rite of Baptism into the faith of Christianity.

Acts, ch. ii. ver. 22: "Ye men of Israel, hear these words; Jesus of Nazareth, a man approved of God among you by miracles and wonders and signs, which God did by him in the midst of you, as ye yourselves also know;" 32: "This Jesus hath God raised up, whereof we all are witnesses." 36: "Therefore let all the house of Israel know assuredly, that God hath made that same Jesus, whom ye have crucified, both Lord and Christ." Ch. iii. vers. 22 and 23: "For Moses truly said unto the Fathers, a Prophet shall the Lord your God raise up unto you of your brethren, like unto me; him shall ye hear in all things, whatsoever he shall say unto you. And it shall come to pass, that every soul, which will not hear the Prophet shall

be destroyed from among the people." Ch. iv. ver. 12: "Neither is there salvation in any other; for there is none other name under heaven given among men, whereby we must be saved." Vers. 26, 27: "The kings of the earth stood up, and the rulers were gathered together against the Lord, and against his Christ. For of a truth against thy holy child Jesus, whom thou hast anointed," &c. Ch. v. ver. 31: "Him has God exalted with his right hand to be a Prince and a Saviour, for to give repentance to Israel, and forgiveness of sins." Ch. xii. ver. 56: "And said, behold, I see the heaven opened, and the Son of Man standing on the right hand of God." Ch. vii. vers. 37, 38: "And Philip said, If thou believest with all thine heart, thou mayest. And he answered and said, I believe that Jesus Christ is the Son of God. And he commanded the chariot to stand still: and they went down both into the water, both Philip and the eunuch: and he baptized him." Ch. x. ver. 38: "How God anointed Jesus of Nazareth with the Holy Ghost and with power. Ver. 42: "And he commanded us to preach unto the people, and to testify that it is he who was ordained of God to be the Judge of quick and dead." Ch. xiii. ver. 38: "Be it known unto you therefore, men and brethren that through this man is preached unto you the forgiveness of sins." Ch. xvii. ver. 3: "Opening and alleging, that Christ must needs have suffered, and risen again from the dead: and that this Jesus, whom I preach unto you is Christ."

Thus we find the Apostles never hesitated to hazard their lives by declaring before the Jews that their master was a Prophet, the expected Messiah, the Son of the living God: which was equally offensive to their countrymen, as if they had called him God himself: yet in none of the sermons do we ever find them representing him as the true God. In the same manner, Jesus himself never assumed that character to himself, although he repeatedly avowed that he was the Messiah, the Son of God, whereby he knew that, according to their law, he would draw the penalty of death upon himself. As to the nature of those doctrines of Christianity deemed essential in the earliest times, I shall content myself with making a few extracts from the Ecclesiastical History of Mosheim, a celebrated author among Trinitarians, which will prove that the doctrine of the Trinity, so zealously maintained as fundamental by the generality of modern Christians, made not its appearance as an essential, or even secondary article of Christian faith, until the commencement of the fourth

century; and then it was introduced after long and violent discussions by the majority of an assembly, who were supported by the authority of a monarch. Mosheim, Vol. I. p. 100: "Nor in this first century was the distinction made between Christians of a more or less perfect order which took place afterwards: whoever acknowledged Christ as the Saviour of mankind, and made solemn profession of his confidence in him was immediately baptised, and received into the Church." P. 411: "Soon after its commencement, even in the year 317, a new contention arose in Egypt, upon a subject of much higher importance, and with consequences of a yet more pernicious nature; the subject of this fatal controversy, which kindled such deplorable division throughout the Christian world, was the doctrine of three persons of the Godhead, a doctrine which in the three preceding centuries had happily escaped the vain curiosity of human researches, and been left undefined and undetermined by any particular set of ideas. The Church indeed had frequently decided against the Sabellians and others, that there was a real difference between the Father and the Son, and that the Holy Ghost was distinct from them both; or, as we commonly speak, that three distinct persons exist in the Deity; but the mutual relation of these persons to each other, and the nature of the distinction that subsists between them, are matters that hitherto were neither disputed nor explained, with respect to which the Church had consequently observed a profound silence:—nothing was declared to be the faith of Christians in this matter, nor were there any modes of expression prescribed as requisite to be used in speaking of the mystery. Hence it happened, that the Christian doctors entertained different sentiments upon this subject without giving the least offence, and discoursed variously concerning the distinction between Father, Son, and the Holy Ghost, each one following his respective opinion with the utmost liberty." On this quotation I beg leave to remark, that if, in the first and purest ages of Christianity, the followers of Christ entertained such different opinions on the subject of the distinction between Father, Son, and Holy Spirit, without incurring the charge of heresy and heterodoxy, and without even breaking the tie of Christian affection towards each other, it is a melancholy contrast that the same freedom of opinion on this subject is not now allowed, nor the same mutual forbearance maintained amongst those who call themselves Christians. Mosheim, p. 412: "In an assembly of

Presbyters of Alexandria, the Bishop of that city, whose name was Alexander, expressed his sentiments on this head with a high degree of freedom and confidence; and maintained, among other things, that the Son was not only of the same eminence and dignity, but also of the same essence with the Father: this assertion was opposed by Arius, one of the Presbyters, a man of a subtile turn, and remarkable for his eloquence." Page 414: "The Emperor Constantine, looking upon the subject of this controversy as a matter of small importance, and as little connected with the fundamental and essential doctrines of religion, contented himself at first with addressing a letter to the contending parties, in which he admonished them to put an end to their disputes; but when the Prince saw that his admonitions were without effect, and that troubles and commotions which the passions of men too often mingle with religious disputes, were spreading and increasing daily throughout the empire, he assembled at length in the year 325 the famous Council of Nice in Bithynia, wherein the deputies of the Church Universal were summoned to put an end to this controversy. In this general council, after many keen debates and violent efforts of the two parties, the doctrine of Arius was condemned; Christ declared consubstantial or of the same essence with the Father; the vanquished Presbyter banished among the Illyrians, and his followers compelled to give their assent to the creed or confession of faith which was composed by this council." It must not escape the notice of my readers, that so late as the year 314, the doctrine of the Son being of the same nature with the Father was supposed to be a matter of small importance, and little connected with the fundamental and essential doctrines of religion.

The reason for the majority being in favour of the three persons of the Godhead at the Council of Nice may be easily accounted for, as I noticed before. More than nine-tenths of the Christians of that age, including the emperor and princes, were Gentile converts, to whom the idea of a plurality of Gods was most familiar and acceptable, and to whose reason as well as practice the worship of a Deity in the human shape was perfectly consonant, as appears from the following quotation, as well as from the Roman and Grecian histories. Mosheim, Vol. I. p. 25: "The deities of all nations were either ancient heroes renowned for noble exploits and worthy deeds, or kings and generals who had founded empires, or women become illustrious by remarkable actions or useful inventions; the merit of these distinguished and eminent persons, contemplated by their posterity with an

enthusiastic gratitude, was the reason of their being exalted into celestial honours." We find also in the Acts of the Apostles, Paul declared to be God by the people of Melita, and both Paul and Barnabas regarded as gods by the inhabitants of Lystra; and the Saviour was ranked in the number of false gods even by professed heathens. *Acts*, ch. xxviii. ver. 6: "Howbeit, they looked when he (Paul) should have swollen or fallen down dead suddenly; but after they had looked a great while, and saw no harm come to him, they changed their minds, and said he was a God." Ch. xiv. ver. 11: "The gods are come down to us in the likeness of men." Mosheim, Vol. I. p. 25: "Many who were not willing to adopt the whole of the doctrines of Christianity were nevertheless, as appears from undoubted records, so struck with the account of his life and actions, and so charmed with the sublime purity of his precepts, that they numbered him (Jesus) among the greatest heroes, nay even among the gods themselves." Page 46: "So illustrious was the fame of Christ's power grown after his resurrection from the dead and the miraculous gifts shed from on high upon his Apostles, that the Emperor Tiberius is said to have proposed his being enrolled among the gods of Rome, which the opposition of the Senate hindered from taking effect." If some of the heathens, from the nature of their superstitions, could rank Jesus among their false gods, it is no wonder if others, when nominally converted to Christianity, should have placed him on an equality with the true God, and should have passed a decree, constituting him one of the persons of the Godhead. These facts coincide entirely with my own firm persuasion of the impossibility, that a doctrine so inconsistent with the evidence of the senses as that of three persons in one being, should ever gain the sincere assent of any one into whose mind it has not been instilled in early education. Early impressions alone can induce a Christian to believe that three are one, and one is three; just as by the same means a Hindoo is made to believe that millions are one, and one is millions; and to imagine that an inanimate idol is a living substance, and capable of assuming various forms. As I have sought to attain the truths of Christianity from the words of the author of this religion and from the undisputed instructions of his holy Apostles, and not from a parent or tutor, I cannot help refusing my assent to any doctrine which I do not find scriptural.

Before concluding, I beg to revert to one or two arguments respecting the nature of Jesus Christ, which have been already partly

touched upon. It is maintained that his nature was double, being divine as Son of God, and human as Son of man—that in the former capacity he performed miracles, and exercised authority over the wind and the sea, and as man was subject to and experienced human feeling—joy and sorrow, pleasure and pain. Is it possible to consider a being in the human shape, acting daily in a manner required by the nature of the human race, as the invisible God, above mortality and all the feelings of mortal beings, from a mere figurative application of the terms "Son of God" or "God" to him, and from the circumstance of his performing wonderful works contrary to the usual course of nature? If so, what can prevent one from esteeming Moses and others, as possessed of both divine and human nature, since Moses, likewise, is called God distinctly, *Exodus*, ch. vii. ver. 1: "I have made thee a God to Pharaoh;" and he is also called man, ("wherewith Moses, the man of God, blessed Israel," *Deut.* ch. xxxiii ver. 1;) and consequently it may be alleged, that in his divine capacity, Moses performed miracles, and commanded the heavens and the earth, ("Give ear, O ye heavens, and I will speak; and hear, O earth, the words of my mouth," *Duet.* ch. xxxii. ver. 1; "For it (the word of Moses) is not a vain thing for you, because *it is your life*," ver. 47;) and that in his human capacity, he suffered death and other miseries. Neither Jesus nor Moses ever declared, "I say to, and perform this as God; and I say so, and perform that as man." If we give so great a latitude to the modes of reasoning employed to justify the idea of one being possessed of two sorts of consciousness, as God and man; two sorts of minds, divine and human; and two sets of souls, eternal and perishable; then we shall not only be at a loss to know what is rational and what is absurd, but shall find our senses and experience of little or no use to us. The mode of interpreting the Scriptures which is universally adopted is this, that when two terms, seemingly contradictory, are applied to one person, then that which is most consistent with reason and with the context, should be taken in a literal, and the other in a figurative sense. Thus God is declared to be immaterial, and yet to have hands, eyes, &c. The latter expressions taken literally, being inconsistent with reason, and with other passages of the Scriptures, are understood as metaphorically implying his power and knowledge, while the former is interpreted in its strict and literal sense: in like manner the term "Lord God," &c., applied to any other than the Supreme Being, must

be figuratively understood. Were any one, in defiance of this general mode of interpretation, to insist that the term "God," applied to Jesus, should be taken in its literal sense, and that, consequently, Jesus should be actually considered God in the human shape, he would not only acknowledge the same intimate connexion of matter with god, that exists between matter and the human soul, but also would necessarily justify the application of such phrases as "Mother of God" to the Virgin Mary, and "Brother of God" to James and others, which are highly derogatory to the character of the Supreme Author of the universe; and it is the use of phrases similar to these which has rendered the religion of the Hindoos so grossly absurd and contemptible. To admit that all things, whether possible or impossible to our understanding, are possible for God, is certainly favourable to the idea of a mixed nature of God and man; but at the same time would be highly detrimental both to religion and society: for all sorts of positions and tales, however impossible they may be, might in that case be advanced and supported on the same plea.

I now conclude my reply with noticing in a brief manner the modes of illustration that Trinitarians adopt both in conversation and in writing in support of the unity of the Godhead, in consistency with the distinction of three persons. 1st, That as the soul, will, and perception, though they are three things, yet are in fact one, so God the Father, God the Son, and God the Holy Ghost, though distinct persons, are to be esteemed as one. Admitting for a moment the propriety of this analogy, it serves to destroy totally their position as to the three existences of the Godhead being distinct substances; for, according to the established system of theology, the soul is believed to be the substance, and will and perceptions, its properties, which have no distinct existence in the same manner as weight and locality are the properties of matter, without having existence as separate substances. If this analogy, then, were to hold good, the Father would be acknowledged as a separate existence like the soul, but the Son and the Holy Spirit must be considered his attributes as will and perception are of the soul:—a doctrine which resembles that of the heretic Sabellius and the early Egyptian Christians.

It is therefore necessary, that, in endeavouring to prove the reasonableness of the idea respecting the unity of three distinct substances of the Godhead, from comparison between them and the

soul, and its will and perception, they should establish first that the soul, will, and perception are three substances, and that they are at the same time one; and then should draw such an analogy, shewing the possibility of the position which they assume.

2ndly, That as notwithstanding the distinct existence of the sun, his rays of light and his rays of heat, they are considered as one; so God the Father, God the Son, and God the Holy Ghost, though separate substances, are one. Were we to admit the separate existence of heat, a point still disputed amongst philosophers, it would serve as an analogy so far as these three distinct substances though different in nature, are connected together; but by no means would answer the purpose of illustrating their position, that these distinct persons are one in nature and essence: for the sun is acknowledged to be a compact body; rays of light are fluid substances subject to absorption, and frequently found emanating from other bodies as well as the sun, and heat an existence of which the most remarkable property is its power of expanding other substances, is frequently unaccompanied by the rays of the sun. But it is universally acknowledged, that whatever argument tends to prove a distinction between substances, must necessarily overturn their unity in essence and existence; and therefore the unity in nature and essence which they assert to exist in the three persons of the Godhead not being found in the sun, light, and heat, the analogy attempted to be drawn must be abandoned. Again, it is advanced, that as a single substance possesses various qualities, and consequently is viewed differently; so the Father, the Son, and the Holy Ghost are in fact one God; yet the Deity in his capacity of the Creator of the world is called the Father, and in his capacity of Mediator is termed the Son, in which he is generally supposed inferior to the Father; and his office of sanctification is named the Holy Ghost, in which he is deemed inferior to both. I know not whether to consider such an argument as reasoning, or as a mockery of reason; since it justifies us in believing, that one and the same being in one of his capacities is superior to himself, and again, in reference to another quality, is inferior to himself; that he is in one case his own beloved Son, and then in another capacity is at the disposal of himself according to the entreaty of his Son. This mode of arguing, after all, serves to deny the Trinity, which represents the Godhead as consisting of three distinct persons and not as one person possessing different attributes, which it is the object

of Trinitarians to prove. They allege the united state of the soul and the body as analogous to the union of the Father and Son ; but no one who believes in the separate existence of the soul, can for a moment suppose it to be of the same essence as the body; so that unless they admit the immateriality of the Father alone, and assert the materiality of the Son in his pre-existent state, this illustration also must be set aside.

Some allege, that as the Son of Man designates human nature, so the Son of God expresses the nature of God. Were we to admit the term "God" as a common noun, and not a proper name, and Godhead as a genus like mankind, &c., and that Jesus was actually begotten of the Deity, this mode of reasoning would stand good ; but Godhead must in this case be brought to a level with other genera, capable of performing animal functions, &c.

Some represent God as a compound substance, consisting of three parts, the Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit, a representation in support of which they can offer no scriptural authority. I would, however, wish to know, whether these parts (Father, Son and Spirit) are of the same nature and existence, or each possessed of a different nature or essence. In the former case, there would be a total impossibility of composition ; for composition absolutely requires articles or parts of different identity and essence ; nothing being capable of composition with itself. Besides, the idea of such a compound substance is inconsistent with that distinct personality of Father, Son, and Spirit, which they maintain.—In the latter case, (that is, the Father, the Son and the Holy Spirit being of different nature,) a composition of these three parts is not impossible ; but it destroys the opinion which they entertain respecting the Father, and the Son, and the Holy Spirit being of the same nature and essence, and of course implies that the Godhead is liable to divisibility.

The argument so adduced by them would include in reality a denial of the epithet God to each part of the Godhead ; for no portion of an existence, either ideal or perceptible in a true sense, can be called the existence itself ; as it is one of the first axioms of abstract truth, that a part is less than the whole : but we find in the Scriptures the Father constantly called God in the strict and full signification of the term. *John*, ch. xvii. ver. 3 : "This is life eternal, that they may know thee, the only true God, and Jesus Christ whom thou hast sent." 1 *Cor.* ch. xv. ver. 24 : "Then cometh the end, when he shall have

delivered up the kingdom to God, even the Father." 1 *Cor.* ch. viii. ver 6: "To us there is but one God, the Father." *Ephesians*, ch. iv. vers. 5, 6: "One Lord, one faith, one baptism; one God and Father of all, who is above all, and through all, and in you all."

Another argument which has great weight with that sect is, that unless Jesus is God and man, he cannot be considered as qualified to perform the office of mediator between God and man; because it is only by this compound character that he intercedes for guilty creatures with their offended God. This mode of reasoning is most evidently opposed to common sense, as well as to the Scriptures; though their zeal in support of the Trinity has not permitted them to see it. I say, opposed to common sense; because we observe, that when any one feels angry with, and inclined to punish one of a herd of cattle which may have trespassed on his grounds, or when a rider wishes to chastise his horse on account of its viciousness, it is his friend or neighbour generally who intercedes in its behalf, and is successful in procuring mercy to the offending animal, in his simple nature, without assuming in additon that of the creature in whose behalf he intercedes.—I say opposed to scripture; because we find in the sacred writings, that Abraham, Moses, and other Prophets stood mediator, and interceded successfully in behalf of an offending people with their offended God; but none of them possessed the double nature of God and man. *Numb.* ch. xi. vers. 1, 2: "When the people complained, it displeased the Lord; and the Lord heard it, and his anger was kindled, and the fire of the Lord burnt among them, and consumed them that were in the uttermost parts of the camp. And the people cried unto Moses; and when Moses prayed unto the Lord, the fire was quenched." Ch. xiv. vers. 19, 20: Moses prayed to the Lord, "Pardon, I beseech thee, the iniquity of this people, according unto the greatness of thy mercy, and as thou hast forgiven this people, from Egypt, even until now. And the Lord said, I have pardoned them according to thy word." Ch. xxi. ver. 7: "Therefore the people came to Moses, and said, We have sinned, for we have spoken against the Lord, and against thee: pray unto the Lord that he take away the serpents from us: And Moses prayed for the people." *Exod*, ch. xxxii. ver 30: "And it came to pass on the morrow, that Moses said unto the people, Ye have sinned a great sin, and now I will go up unto the Lord, peradventure I shall make an atonement for your sins." *Gen.*, ch. xviii. ver. 32: "And

he (Abraham) said, O let not the Lord be angry and I will speak yet but this once:—Peradventure ten shall be found there. And he said, I will not destroy it for ten's sake." I find several others performing the office of mediator and intercessor in common with Jesus, as I noticed before; and indeed this seems to have been an office common to all Prophets: but none of them is supposed to have been clothed with Godhead and manhood in union. *Jeremiah*, ch. xxvii. ver. 18: "But if they be Prophets, and if the word of the Lord be with them, let them now make intercession to the Lord of Hosts," &c. *Deut.* ch. v. ver. 5: "I (Moses) stood between the Lord and you at that time, to shew you the word of the Lord." I regret very much that a sect generally so enlightened, should, on the one hand, have supposed the divine and human natures to be so diametrically opposed to each other, that it is morally impossible for God even to accept intercession from a mere human being in behalf of the human race, and, on the other hand, should have advanced that the Deity joined to his own nature that of man, and was made flesh, possessing all the members and exercising all the functions of man—propositions which are morally inconsistent with each other.

To avoid the supposed dishonour attached to the appointment of a mediator less than divine, the Deity is declared by them to have assumed the human shape, and to have subjected himself to the feelings and inclinations natural to the human species; which is not only inconsistent with the immutable nature of God, but highly derogatory to the honour and glory which we are taught to ascribe to him.

Other arguments of the same nature are frequently advanced, but they are altogether much fewer in number, and far less convincing, than those which are commonly brought forward by Hindoos to support their polytheism. Since, then, in evincing the truth and excellence of the Precepts of Jesus, there is no need of the aid of metaphysical arguments, and since, as a last resource, they do not depend for their support on the ground of mystery, the Compiler has, in the discharge of his duty towards his countrymen, properly introduced them as a Guide to Peace and Happiness.

APPENDIX.

No. I.

On the Quotations from the Old Testament contained in the New.

It cannot have escaped the notice of attentive readers of the Scriptures, that the bare quotations in the New Testament from the Old, when unaccompanied with their respective contexts, are liable to be misunderstood. Those who are not well versed in the sacred writings, finding in these references such phrases as apparently corroborate their already acquired opinions, not only lay stress upon them, in support of the sentiments generelly adopted but even lead others, very often, though unintentionally, into great errors.

Thus *Matthew*, ii. 15. "Out of Egypt have I called my Son." The Evangelist refers to verse 1st, chapter xi. of *Hosea*; which, though really applied to Israel, represented there as the Son of God, is used by the Apostle in reference to the Saviour, in consideration of a near resemblance between their circumstances in this instance:—both Israel and Jesus were carried into Egypt and recalled from thence, and both were denominated in the Scriptures the "Son of God." The passage of *Hosea* thus runs from ch. xi, vers. 1st to the 3rd: "When Israel was a child, then I loved him, and called my Son out of Egypt. As they called them, so they went from them: they sacrificed unto Baalim, and burnt incense to graven images. I taught Ephraim also to go, taking them by their arms; but they knew not that I healed them." In which Israel, who is represented as a child of God, is declared to have sacrificed to Baalim, which cannot justly be ascribed to the Saviour.

With a view therefore to remove the possibility of such errors and to convince my readers that all the references in the New Testament with their contexts manifest the unity of God and natural inferiority of the Messiah to the Father of the universe, I have endeavoured to arrange them methodically, beginning with such quotations as were made by Jesus himself, agreeably to the proposal of the Reverend Editor.

Quotations by Jesus himself exactly agreeing with the Hebrew.

Matthew, iv. 4: "Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God: the same in *Luke*, iv.

4, compared with *Deut.* viii. ver. 3: "And he humbled thee, and suffered thee to hunger, and fed thee with manna, which thou knewest not, neither did thy fathers know; that he might make thee know, that man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of the Lord doth man live."

Matthew, vi. 7: "Thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy God"—compared with *Deut.* iv. 16, 17: "Ye shall not tempt the Lord your God, as ye tempted him in Massah. Ye shall diligently keep the commandments of the Lord your God, and his testimonies, and his statutes, which he hath commanded thee."

Matthew, ix. 13: "But go ye and learn what that meaneth, I will have mercy, and not sacrifice"—compared with *Hosea* vi. 5, 6: "Therefore have I hewed them by the prophets; I have slain them by the words of my mouth; and thy judgments are as the light that goeth forth. For I desired mercy, and not sacrifice; and the knowledge of God more than burnt offerings."

Matthew xix. 19, xxii. 39: "Honour thy father and thy mother: and, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself"—compared with *Exodus* xx. 12: 'Honour thy father and mother, that thy days may be long upon the land which the Lord thy God giveth thee"—and *Levit.* xix. 18: "Thou shalt not avenge nor bear any grudge against the children of thy people; but thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself: I am the Lord."

Matthew, xxi. 42: "The stone which the builders rejected, the same is become the head of the corner: this is the *Lord's doing*, and it is marvellous in our eyes;"—the same in *Mark* xii. 10, *Luke* xx. 17, compared with *Psalms* cxviii. 22, 23: "I (says David) will praise thee; for thou hast heard me, and art become my salvation. The stone which the builders refused is become the head-stone of the corner. This is the Lord's doing; it is marvellous in our eyes." To decide whether this passage is principally applied to David, and in the way of accommodation to Jesus, or originally to Jesus himself, is entirely left to the discretion of my readers; but it is evident in either case, that it is God that has *raised* the *stone so rejected*.

Matthew, xxii. 44: "The Lord said unto my Lord, Sit thou on my right hand, till I make thine enemies thy footstool;"—the same in *Mark* xii. 36, *Luke* xx. 42, compared with *Psalms*, cx. 1, 2: "The Lord said unto my Lord, Sit thou at my right hand, until I make thine enemies thy footstool. The Lord shall send the rod of thy

strength out of Zion: rule thou in the midst of thine enemies." This passage is simply applied to the Messiah, manifesting that the victory gained by him over his enemies was entirely owing to the influence of God.

John, x. 35: "Ye are gods"—compared with *Psalm* lxxxii. 1, 6 7: "God standeth in the congregation of the mighty; he judgeth among the gods. I have said, Ye are gods, and all of you are children of the Most High: but ye shall die like men, and fall like one of the princes;" wherein Jesus shews from this quotation, that the term God is figuratively applicable in the Scriptures to creatures of a superior nature.

Quotations made by Jesus himself, nearly agreeing with the Hebrew.

Matthew, iv. 10: "Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him only shalt thou serve"—compared with *Deut.* vi. 13: "Thou shalt fear the Lord thy God, and serve him, and shalt swear by his name."

Matthew, xiii. 14: "By hearing ye shall hear, and shall not understand; and seeing ye shall see and shall not perceive"—compared with *Isaiah* vi. 9, and its context, "I heard the voice of the Lord, saying, Whom shall I send, and who will go for us? Then said I, (Isaiah,) Here am I, send me. And he said, Go and tell this people, Hear ye indeed, but understand not; and see ye indeed, but perceive not." This censure has original reference to the conduct of the people to whom Isaiah was sent, but it is implied by Jesus in an accommodated sense to that of the Jews of his time.

Matthew, xix. 5: "For this cause shall a man leave father and mother, and shall cleave to his wife: and they twain shall be one flesh"—compared with *Genesis*, ii. 23: "And Adam said, This is now bone of my bone, and flesh of my flesh: she shall be called woman; because she was taken out of man. Therefore shall a man leave his father and his mother, and shall cleave unto his wife; and they shall be one flesh."

Matthew, xix. 18, 19: "Thou shalt do no murder, Thou shalt not commit adultery, Thou shalt not steal, Thou shalt not bear false witness, Honour thy father and thy mother; and, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself"—compared with *Exodus* xx. 12—16: "Honour thy father and thy mother, that thy days may be long in the land which the Lord thy God giveth thee. Thou shalt not kill. Thou shalt not commit adultery. Thou shalt not steal. Thou shalt not bear false witness against thy neighbour."

Matthew, xxii. 32: "I am the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob"—compared with *Exodus*, iii. 6: "Moreover he said, I am the God of thy father, the God of Abraham, the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob, and Moses hid his face; for he was afraid to look upon God."

Matthew, xxii. 37: "Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, with all thy mind:" the same in *Mark* xii. 30, *Luke* x. 27, compared with *Deut.* vi. 5: "And thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thine heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy might."

Matthew xxvi. 31: "Then saith Jesus unto them, All ye shall be offended because of me this night: for it is written, I will smite the Shepherd, and the sheep of the flock shall be scattered abroad"—compared with *Zechariah*, xiii. 7: "Awake, O sword, against my Shepherd, and against the man that is my fellow,* saith the Lord of hosts: smite the Shepherd, and the sheep shall be scattered; and I will turn mine hand upon the little one."

Verse 7, either was originally applied to Agrippa (אגריפס) the last king of the Jews, whose subjects were scattered after he had been smitten with the sword, and in an accommodated sense is applied by Jesus to himself, whose disciples were in like manner dispersed while he was suffering afflictions from his enemies—or is directly applicable to Jesus; but in both cases his total subordination and submission to the Father of the universe is too obvious to be disputed.

John, vi. 45: "It is written in the Prophets, And they shall be all taught of God. Every man, therefore that hath heard and hath learned of the Father, cometh unto me"—compared with *Isaiah*, liv. 13: "And all thy children shall be taught of the Lord; and great shall be the peace of thy children."

John, xiii. 18: "I speak not of you all; I know whom I have chosen; but that the Scripture may be fulfilled, He that eateth bread with me hath lifted up his heel against me"—compared with *Psalm* xli. 9: "Mine own familiar friend, in whom I trusted, which did eat of my bread, lifted up his heel against me," is immediately applicable to David and his friend Ahithophel, who betrayed him; and, secondarily, to Jesus, and Judas, his traitorous apostle.

* The word עמיתי found in the original Hebrew Scripture signifies one that lives near another; therefore the word "fellow" in the English translation is not altogether correct, as justly observed by Archbishop Newcome.

John, xv. 25 : "But this cometh to pass, that the word might be fulfilled that is written in their law, They hated me without a cause" —compared with *Psalm*, cix. 2, 3 : "They have spoken against me with a lying tongue. They compassed me about also with words of hatred ; and fought against me without a cause." Verse 3rd was originally applied to David and his enemies, and in an accommodated sense to Jesus and the Jews of his day

Quotation made by Jesus himself, agreeing with the Hebrew in sense, but not in words.

Matthew, xxi. 16 : "Out of the mouth of babes and sucklings thou hast perfected praise"—compared with *Psalm* viii. 2, and its preceding verse : "Out of the mouth of babes and sucklings hast thou ordained strength, because of thine enemies ; that thou mightest still the enemy and the avenger."

Quotation taken from combined Passages of Scripture.

Matthew, xxi. 13 : "And said unto them, It is written, My house shall be called the house of prayer : but you have made it a den of thieves"—compared with *Isaiah*, lvi. 17 : "For mine house shall be called the house of prayer for all people." Ch. vii. 11 : "Is this house, which is called by my name, become a den of robbers in your eyes ?"

Quotation differing from the Hebrew, but agreeing with the Septuagint.

Matthew, xv. 7—9 : "Ye hypocrites, well did Esias prophesy of you saying, This people draweth nigh unto me with their mouth, and honoureth me with their lips ; but their heart is far from me. But in vain they do worship me, teaching for doctrines the commandments of men"—compared with *Isaiah*, xxix. 13, which in the Septuagint corresponds exactly with the gospel, but which in verse 9 differs from the original Hebrew, thus translated in the common version : "And their fear towards me is taught by the precepts of men."

Quotations in which there is reason to suspect a different reading in Hebrew, or that the Apostles understood the words in a sense different from that expressed in our Lexicons.

Matthew, xi. 10 : "This is he of whom it is written, Behold I send my messenge: *before thy face*, who shall prepare thy way before *thee*"—compared with *Malachi*, iii. 1 : Behold I *will* send my messen-

ger, and he shall prepare the way before *me*." *Matthew* xxvi. 31: "I will smite the Shepherd, and the sheep of the flock shall be scattered abroad"—compared with *Zechariah*, xiii. 7: "Smite the Shepherd, and the sheep shall be scattered."

Luke, iv. 8: "Thou shalt *worship* the Lord thy God, and him only shalt thou serve"—compared with *Deut*, vi. 13: "Thou shalt *fear* the Lord thy God, and serve Him."

Quotations slightly varying from the Septuagint.

Luke, iv. 18, 19: "The Spirit of the Lord is upon me, because he hath anointed me to preach the gospel to the poor; he hath sent me to heal the broken-hearted, to preach deliverance to the captive, and *recovering of sight to the blind*; to set at liberty them that are bruised; to preach the acceptable year of the Lord"—compared with *Isaiah*, lxi. 12: The spirit of the Lord God is upon me; because the Lord hath anointed me to preach good tidings unto the meek: he hath sent me to bind up the broken-hearted, to proclaim liberty to the captives; and the opening of the prison to them that are bound; to proclaim the acceptable year of the Lord."

Now I beg the attention of my readers to these quotations ascribed to Jesus himself, and appeal to them whether he assumed in any of these references the character of the Deity, or even equality with him. I am certain that they will find nothing of the kind: Jesus declared himself in these instances entirely subordinate to the Almighty God, and subject to his authority, and frequently compared himself to David or some of the other prophets.

No. II.

On the References made to the Old Testament in Support of the Deity of Jesus.

TRINITARIAN Divines quote *John*, i. 14: "And the Word was made flesh, and dwelt among us, (and we beheld his glory, the glory as of the only begotten of the Father,) full of grace and truth," as a reference to *Isaiah*, ix. 6: "For unto us a child is born, unto us a son is given, and the government shall be upon his shoulder; and his name shall be called Wonderful, Counsellor, The mighty God, everlasting Father, The Prince of Peace,"—though the Evangelist John *made no allusion* to this passage of *Isaiah* in the verse in question. The passage of *Isaiah* thus referred to was applied to *Hezekiah*, the son of Ahaz, figuratively designated as the son of the virgin, the daughter of Zion, to wit, Jerusalem, foretold by the Prophet as the deliverer of the city from the hands of its enemies, though its utter destruction was then threatened by the kings of Syria and Israel. The words "a virgin," according to the English translation, are "the virgin," both in the original Hebrew and in the Greek of the Gospel of *Matthew*, as well as in the Septuagint. But unless Ahaz was aware of the allusion of the Prophet, the use of the definite article in this passage must be quite inexplicable; and no one will contend for a moment, that it was given to that wicked king to understand that the mother of Christ was the virgin alluded to; what, then, could Ahaz have comprehended by the expression "the virgin"? On referring to 2 *Kings*, xix. 21, we find the same Prophet make use of the very expression, where he informs the king, *Hezekiah*, of the denunciation of God against Sennacherib, the blasphemous king of Assyria, who was at that time besieging Jerusalem. "This is the work that the Lord hath spoken concerning him; *The virgin*, the daughter of Zion, hath despised thee, and laughed thee to scorn."—It is impossible to conceive that these words, expressly spoken of the king of Assyria, bear any allusion to the virgin, the mother of Christ; and it illustrates clearly the otherwise obscure expression of the Prophet addressed to Ahaz, when he foretold to him the happy reign of his successor Hezekiah. In *Isaiah*, x. 32, "He (the king of Assyria) shall shake his hand against

the mount of the daughter of Zion, the hill of Jerusalem," the epithet "the daughter of Zion," which in the last passage was used as synonymous with "the virgin," here signifies Jerusalem itself, in which sense it was commonly used in the figurative language of the Prophet, and no doubt well understood by Ahaz: for we find the same words in many other passages used to signify either a city or the people of a city. *Isaiah* xviii. 12: "And he said, Thou shalt no more rejoice, O thou oppressed *virgin*, daughter of Zion." Ch. xlvii. 1: "Come down, and sit in the dust, O *virgin* daughter of Babylon."—*Jeremiah*, xiv. 17; "Therefore thou shalt say this word unto them: Let mine eyes run down with tears night and day, and let them not cease; for the *virgin* daughter of my people is broken with a great breach." Ch. xviii. 13: "Therefore thus saith the Lord; Ask ye now among the heathen, who hath heard such things; the *virgin* of Israel hath done a very horrible thing." Ch. xxxi. 4: "Again I will build thee, and thou shalt be built, O *virgin* of Israel; thou shalt again be adorned with thy tabrets, and shalt go forth in the dances of them that make merry." Ver. 13: "Then shall the *virgin* rejoice in the dance," &c. Ver. 21: "Set thee up waymarks, make thee high heaps; set thine heart toward the highway, even the way which thou wentest: turn again, O *virgin* of Israel, turn again to these thy cities." *Lam.*, ch. i. 15: "The Lord hath trodden the *virgin*, the daughter of Judah, as in a wine-press." Ch. ii. 13: "What thing shall I take to witness for thee? what thing shall I liken to thee, O daughter of Jerusalem? what thing shall I liken to thee, O *virgin* daughter of Zion? for thy breach is great like the sea; who can heal thee?" *Amos*, v. 2: "The *virgin* of Israel is fallen, she shall no more rise; she is forsaken upon her land; there is none to raise her up."

To shew that the passages in question, as well as all that is foretold in this and the succeeding chapters, refer to the reign of Hezekiah, nothing more than a comparison of them with the records of that reign is requisite. I shall therefore lay before my readers all those verses in these chapters that are commonly referred to by Trinitarians as alluding to the coming of Christ, with their contexts, together with such parts of the history of the reign of Hezekiah as appear to me to be clearly indicated by those passages.

Isaiah, vii. 1: "And it came to pass in the days of Ahaz, the son of Jotham, the son of Uzziah, king of Judah, that Rezin, the king of Syria, and Pekah, the son of Remaliah, king of Israel, went up toward

Jerusalem to war against it, but could not prevail against it. 2. And it was told the house of David, saying, Syria is confederate with Ephraim. And his heart was moved, and the heart of his people, as the trees of the wood are moved with the wind. 3. Then said the Lord unto Isaiah, Go forth now to meet Ahaz, thou, and Shearjashub thy son, at the end of the conduit of the upper pool in the highway of the fuller's field. 4. And say unto him, Take heed, and be quiet; fear not, neither be faint-hearted, for the two tails of these smoking firebrands, for the fierce anger of Rezin with Syria, and of the son of Remaliah. 5. Because Syria, Ephraim, and the son of Remaliah, have taken evil counsel against thee, saying, 6. Let us go up against Judah, and vex it, and let us make a breach therein for us, and set a king in the midst of it, *even* the son of Tabeal: 7. Thus saith the Lord God, It shall not stand, neither shall it come to pass. 8. For the head of Syria is Damascus, and the head of Damascus *is* Rezin; and within threescore and five years shall Ephraim be broken, that it be not a people. 9. And the head of Ephraim is Samaria, and the head of Samaria is Remaliah's son. If ye will not believe, surely ye shall not be established. 10. Moreover, the Lord spake again unto Ahaz, saying, 11. Ask thee a sign of the Lord thy God; ask it either in the depth, or in the height above. 12. But Ahaz said, I will not ask, neither will I tempt the Lord. 13. And he said, Hear ye now, O house of David, Is it a small thing for you to weary men, but will ye weary my God also? 14. Therefore the Lord himself shall give you a sign; Behold, a virgin shall conceive, and bear a son, and shall call his name Immanuel. 15. Butter and honey shall he eat, that he may know to refuse the evil, and choose the good. 16. For before the child shall know to refuse the evil, and choose the good, the land that thou abhorrest shall be forsaken of both her kings. 17. The Lord shall bring upon thee, and upon thy people, and upon thy father's house, days that have not come, from the day that Ephraim departed form Judah; even the king of Assyria."

Chap. viii. 5: "The Lord spake also unto me again, saying, 6. Forasmuch as this people refuseth the waters of Shiloah, that go softly, and rejoice in Rezin and Remaliah's son. 7. Now therefore, behold, the Lord bringeth up upon them the waters of the river, strong and many, even the king of Assyria, and all his glory: and he shall come up over all his channels, and go over all his banks; 8. And he shall pass through Judah; he shall overflow and go over.—

he shall reach even to the neck; and the stretching out of his wings shall fill the breadth of thy land, O Immanuel."

Ch. ix. 1: "Nevertheless, the dimness shall not be such as was in her vexation, when at the first he lightly afflicted the land of Zebulum, and the land of Naphtali and afterward did more grievously afflict her by the way of the sea, beyond Jordan in Galilee of the nations. 2. The people that walked in darkness have seen a great light: they that dwell in the land of the shadow of death, upon them hath the light shined. 3. Thou hast multiplied the nation, and not increased the joy: they joy before thee according to the joy in harvest, and as men rejoice when they divide the spoil. 4. For thou hast broken the yoke of his burden, and the staff of his shoulder, the rod of his Oppressor, as in the day of Midian. 5. For every battle of the warrior is with confused noise, and garments rolled in blood; but this shall be with burning and fuel of fire. For unto us a child is born, unto us a son is given: and the government shall be upon his shoulder; and his name shall be called Wonderful, Counsellor, The mighty God, The everlasting Father, The Prince of Peace. 7. Of the increase of his Government and peace there shall be no end,* upon the throne of David, and upon his kingdom, to order it, and to establish it with judgment and with justice from henceforth, even for ever. The zeal of the Lord of hosts will perform this."

Ch. x. 5: "O Assyrian, the rod of mine anger, and the staff in their hand is mine indignation. 6. I will send him against an hypocritical nation, and against the people of my wrath will I give him a charge, to take the spoil and to take the prey, and to tread them down like the mire of the streets. 7. Howbeit he meaneth not so, neither doth his heart think so; but it is in his heart to destroy and cut off nations, not a few. 8. For he saith, Are not my princes altogether Kings; 9. Is not Calno as Carchemish? Is not Hamath as Arpad? is not Samaria as Damascus?† 10. As my hand hath found

* Those that are at all versed in scriptural language will attach no weight to the terms "no end" and "for ever," found in ch. v. 7; for the former often signifies plenteousness, and the latter long, but not eternal duration. *Vide* Eccles., iv, 16: "There is no end of all the people, even of all that have been before them." Isaiah, ii. 7: "Neither is there any end of their treasure, neither is there any end of their chariots." Nahum, ii. 9: "There is none end of their store." Ch. iii. 3: "And there is none end of their corpses." Psalm, cxlv. 2, 9: "I will praise thy name *for ever and ever*," Deut. xv. 17: "And he shall be thy servant *for ever*."

† Compare vers. 9—11, with the historical relation of the vain boastings of the Assyrian, narrated in 2 Kings, xviii. 33—35.

the kingdoms of the idols, and whose graven images did excel them of Jerusalem and of Samaria; 11. Shall I not, as I have done unto Samaria and her idols, so do to Jerusalem and her idols? 12. Wherefore it shall come to pass that, when the Lord hath performed his whole work upon mount Zion and on Jerusalem, I will punish the fruit of the stout heart of the King of Assyria, and the glory of his high looks."—16. "Therefore shall the Lord, the Lord of hosts, send among his fat ones leanness; and under his glory he shall kindle a burning like the burning of a fire. 17. And the light of Israel shall be for a fire, and his *Holy One* for a flame: and it shall burn and devour his thorns and briers in one day."—24. "Therefore thus saith the Lord God of hosts, O my people that dwellest in Zion, be not afraid of the Assyrian: he shall smite thee with a rod, and shall lift up his staff against thee, after the manner of Egypt. 25. For yet a very little while, and the indignation shall cease, and mine anger, in their destruction." 27.* "And it shall come to pass in that day, that his burden shall be taken away from off thy shoulder, and his yoke from off thy neck, and the yoke shall be destroyed because of the anointing."

2 *Kings*, xviii. 1: "Now it came to pass in the third year of Hoshea, son of Elah, king of Israel, that Hezekiah, the son of Ahaz, king of Judah began to reign. 2. Twenty and five years old was he when he began to reign; and he reigned twenty and nine years in Jerusalem: his mother's name also was Abi, the daughter of Zachariah. And he did that which was right in the sight of the Lord, according to all that David his father did. 4. He removed the high places, and brake the images, and cut down the groves, and brake in pieces the brazen serpent that Moses had made: for unto those days the children of Israel did burn incense to it; and he called it Nehushtan. 5. He trusted in the Lord God of Israel; so that *after him* was none like him among all the kings of Judah, nor any that were *before him*. 6. For he clave to the Lord, and departed not from following him, but kept his commandments, which the Lord commanded Moses. 7. And the Lord was with him: and he prospered whithersoever he went forth: and he rebelled against the King of Assyria and served him not. 8. He smote the Philistines, even unto Gaza, and the borders thereof, from the tower of the watchmen to the fenced city."—17.

* Compare with 2 Kings, xvi. 7, "So Ahaz sent messengers to Tiglathpileser, King of Assyria, saying, I am thy servant and thy son." &c., and ch. xviii. 7, as above.

"And the king of Assyria sent Tartan, and Rabsaris, and Rab-shakeh, from Lachish to king Hezekiah, with a great host against Jerusalem. And they went up and came to Jerusalem. And when they were come up, they came and stood by the conduit of the upper pool, which is in the highway of the fuller's field."—28. "Then Rab-shakeh stood, and cried with a loud voice in the Jews' language, and spake, saying, Hear the word of the great king, the king of Assyria: 29. Thus saith the king, Let not Hezekiah deceive you: for he shall not be able to deliver you out of his hand: 30. Neither let Hezekiah make you trust in the Lord, saying, The Lord will surely deliver us, and this city shall not be delivered into the hand of the king of Assyria. 31. Hearken not to Hezekiah: for thus saith the king of Assyria, Make an arrangement with me by a present, and come out to me, and then eat ye every man of his own vine, and every one of his fig-tree, and drink ye every one the waters of his cistern: 32. Until I come and take you away to a land like your own land; a land of corn and wine, a land of bread and vineyards, a land of oil-olive and of honey, that ye may live, and not die: and hearken not unto Hezekiah, when he persuadeth you, saying, The Lord will deliver us. 33. Hath any of the gods of the nations delivered at all his land out of the hand of the king of Assyria? 34. Where are the gods of Hamath, and of Arpad? where are the gods of Sepharvaim, Hena, and Ivah? have they delivered Samaria out of mine hand? 35 Who are they among all the gods of the countries, that have delivered their country out of mine hand, that the Lord should deliver Jerusalem out of mine hand?

Ch xix. 15: "And Hezekiah prayed before the Lord, and said, Lord God of Israel, which dwellest between the cherubims, thou art the God, even thou alone, of all the kingdoms of the earth; thou hast made heaven and earth. 16. Lord, bow down thine ear and hear: open, Lord, thine eyes, and see: and hear the words of Sennacherib which hath sent him to reproach the living God." 19. "Now therefore, O Lord our God, I beseech thee save thou us out of his hand that all the kingdoms of the earth may know that thou art the Lord God, even thou only. 20. Then Isaiah the son of Amoz sent to Hezekiah, saying, Thus saith the Lord God of Israel, that which hast prayed to me against Sennacherib, king of Assyria, I have heard. 21 This is the word that the Lord hath spoken concerning him: The *virgin, daughter of Zion*, hath despised thee and laughed thee to

scorn: the daughter of Jerusalem hath shaken her head at thee. 22. Whom hast thou reproached and blasphemed? and against whom hast thou exalted thy voice, and lifted up thine eyes on high? even against the Holy one of Israel. 23. By the messengers thou hast reproached the Lord, and hast said, With the multitude of my chariots I am come up to the height of the mountains, to the sides of Lebanon, and will cut down the tall cedar trees thereof, and the choice fir trees thereof: and I will enter into the lodgings of his borders, and into the forest of his Carmel."—27. "But I know thy abode, and thy going in, and thy rage against me. 28. Because thy rage against me and thy tumult is come up into mine ears, therefore I will put my hook in thy nose, and my bridle in thy lips, and I will turn thee back by the way by which thou camest." 32. "Therefore thus saith the Lord concerning the king of Assyria, He shall not come into this city, nor shoot an arrow there, nor come before it with a shield, nor cast a bank against it. 33. By the way that he came, by the same shall he return, and shall not come into this city, saith the Lord. 34. For I will defend this city, to save it, for mine own sake, and for my servant David's sake. 35. And it came to pass that night, that the angel of the Lord went out, and smote in the camp of the Assyrians an hundred fourscore and five thousand: and when they arose early in the morning, behold, they were all dead corpses. 36. So Sennacherib, king of Assyria departed, and went and returned, and dwelt at Ninevah. 37. And it came to pass, as he was worshipping in the house of Nisroch his god, that Adrammelech and Sharzer, his sons, smote him with the sword; and they escaped into the land of Armenia: and Esar-haddon, his son, reigned in his stead."

2 *Chron*, xxx. 24: "For Hezekiah, king of Judah, did give to the congregation a thousand bullocks, and seven thousand sheep; and the princes gave to the congregation a thousand bullocks, and ten thousand sheep; and a great number of priests sanctified themselves. 25. And all the congregation of Judah, with the priests and the Levites, and all the congregation that came out of Israel, and the strangers that came out of the land of Israel, and that dwelt in Judah, rejoiced. 26. So there was great joy in Jerusalem; for since the time of Solomon, the son of David, King of Israel, there was not the like in Jerusalem. 27. Then the priests, the Levites arose and blessed the people: and their voice was heard, and their prayer came up to his holy dwelling-place, even unto heaven."

Ch. xxxi 20: "And thus did Hezekiah throughout all Judah, and wrought that which was good and right and truth before the Lord his God. 21. And in every work that he began in the service of the house of God, and in the law, and in the commandments, to seek his God, he did it with all his heart, and prospered."

Ch. xxxii. 23: "And many brought gifts unto the Lord to Jerusalem, and presents to Hezekiah, king of Judah, so that he was magnified in the sight of all nations from thenceforth." 33. "And Hezekiah slept with his fathers, and they buried him in the chiefest of the sepulchres of the sons of David: and all Judah and the inhabitants of Jerusalem did him honour at his death. And Manasseh, his son, reigned in his stead."

If, as is declared by Trinitarians, the child promised in ch. vii. 14, be the same that is alluded to in ch. ix. 6, and ch. x. 17, it is quite evident from the context, that he was to be the deliverer of the Jews from the hands of the king of Assyria, and was to be distinguished by the excellence of his administration and the respect in which he was to be held by all the nations. Making allowance for the hyperbolical style of Eastern nations, nothing can more aptly apply as prophecy than these passages do to the reign of Hezekiah, as described in the above extracts from *Kings* and *Chronicles*. But what, it may be asked, had the birth of Christ to do with the destruction of the King of Assyria? or how could it be said that before he "knew to refuse the evil and choose the good," the land of Syria and Israel should be deserted of their respective kings, Rezin and Pekah, who were gathered to their fathers many years before this birth?

This illustrious son of Ahaz was not the only king among the select nation of God, that was honoured, with such names as Hezekiah or "God my strength" and "Emmanuel" or "God with us;" and also with such epithets as "Wonderful, Counsellor, the mighty God, the Everlasting Father, and the Prince of Peace." We find several other chiefs of that tribe that used to walk in the way of God, dignified in Scripture with epithets of a similar import. *Genesis*, xxxii. 28: "And he said, Thy name shall be called no more Jacob, but Israel, (Prince of God:) for as a prince hast thou power with God and with men, and hast prevailed." *Psalm*, lxxxix. 18: "For the Lord is our defence; and THE HOLY ONE of Israel is our king. 19. Then thou spakest in vision to *thy Holy One*, and saidst, I have laid help upon one that is *mighty*: I have exalted one chosen out of the people.

20. I have found David my servant; with my holy oil have I *anointed* him:" 27. "Also I will make him MY FIRST BORN, higher than the kings of the *earth*."

As to the words "a virgin," found in the English translation, I request my readers to advert to the original Hebrew הָעַלְמָה "the virgin," as well as to the Greek both of the Septuagint and the Gospel of *Matthew*, ἡ παρθένος "the virgin," leaving it to them to judge, whether a translation which so entirely perverts the meaning preserved throughout, by men whom we cannot suspect of ignorance of the original language, must not have proceeded from previous determination to apply the term "virgin," as found in the Prophet, to the mother of Christ, in order that the high titles applied to Hezekiah might in the most unqualified manner be understood of Jesus.

The Evangelist Matthew referred in his Gospel to *Isaiah*, vii. 14, merely for the purpose of accommodation; the son of Ahaz and the Saviour resembling each other, in each being the means, at different periods, though in different senses, of establishing the throne of the house of David. In the same manner he referred to *Hosea*, xi. 1, in ch. ii, 15, of his Gospel, and in many other instances. How inconsistent is it that a sect, which maintains the omniscience and omnipotence of Jesus, should apply to him a passage, by which he is made subject to such a degree of ignorance, as not to be able at one period to distinguish between good and evil! (*Isaiah*, vii. 16: "For before the child shall know to refuse the evil, and choose the good," &c.) Admitting that these quotations in *Isaiah* were originally applicable to Jesus, they cannot assist in proving the Deity of the Messiah; just as they fall short of proving the divinity of Hezekiah when applied to him:—for we find in the sacred writings the name of God, and even the term of Jehovah, the peculiar name of God, applied as an appellation to others, without establishing any argument for asserting the Deity of those to whom such names are given. *Jeremiah*, xxxiii. 16: "In those days shall Judah be saved, and Jerusalem shall dwell safely: and this is the name wherewith she shall be called, JEHOVAH OUR RIGHTEOUSNESS." In the English version, the word Jehovah is rendered "Lord," in this and in other passages. *Exodus*, xvii. 15: "And Moses built an altar, and called the name of it Jehovah-nissi, or 'JEHOVAH MY BANNER.'" It is fortunate that some sect has not hitherto arisen, maintaining the Deity of Jerusalem, of the altar of Moses, from the authority of the passages just mentioned.

In the Epistle to the Hebrews, ch. i. 8, 9, reference is made to *Psalm*, xlv. 6, 7: "Thy throne, O God, is for ever and ever, &c. Thou lovest righteousness, and hatest wickedness: therefore God, thy God, hath anointed thee," &c. I have frequently noticed that the term "God" in an inferior sense is often applied in the Scriptures to the Messiah and other distinguished persons; but it deserves particularly to be noticed in this instance, that the Messiah, in whatever sense he is declared God, is in the very same sense described in ch. i 9. ("God, thy God,") as *having a God, superior to him*, and by whom he *was appointed* to the office of Messiah.

Supposed application of the term "Jehovah" to Jesus in references made to the Old Testament.

Luke, i. 16, 18: "And many of the children of Israel shall he (John the Baptist) turn to the Lord their God. And he shall go before him in the spirit and power of Elias, to turn the hearts of the fathers to the children, and the disobedient to the wisdom of the just; to make ready a people prepared for the Lord"—compared with *Isaiah*, xl. 3, "The voice of him that crieth in the wilderness, Prepare ye the way of Jehovah, make straight in the desert a highway for our God:" and also in *Malachi*, iii. 1, Behold I will send my messenger, and he shall prepare the way before me: and the Lord whom ye seek, shall suddenly come to his temple, even the messenger of the covenant, whom ye delight in: behold he shall come, saith Jehovah of hosts." From this, it is concluded by Trinitarians, that because the Prophet John is described as the forerunner of Jehovah, and in the evangelist as the forerunner of Jesus, therefore Jesus must be Jehovah.

In reply to this, it may be simply observed, that we find in the Prophets distinct and separate mention of Jehovah and of the Messiah as the messenger of the covenant; John therefore ought to be considered as the forerunner of both, in the same manner as a commander sent in advance to occupy a strong post in the country of the enemy, may be said to be preparing the way for the battles of his king, or of the general whom the king places at the head of his army.

They also refer to *Isaiah*, vi. 5, "For mine eyes have seen the King the Lord of hosts"—comparing it with *John*, xii. 41, "These things said Isaiah, when he saw his glory, and spake of him." The passage in the evangelist is more correctly explained by referring to

John, viii. 56, "Your father Abraham rejoiced to see my day;" which cannot be understood of ocular vision, but prophetic anticipation, whereas the glory seen in the vision of Isaiah was that of God himself in the delivery of the commands given to the Prophet on that occasion.

I *Corinth*, i. 30, "But of him are ye in Christ Jesus who of God is made into us wisdom and rightousness," &c., is compared with *Jeremiah*, xxiii. 6, "He shall be called Jehovah our rightousness." In reply to which I only refer my reader again to the passage in *Jeremiah*, xxxiii. 16, in which Jerusalem also is called "Jehovah our righteousness," and to the phrase "*is made unto us of God*" found in the passage in question, and expressing the inferiority of Jesus to God. Also 2 *Cor.*, v, 21, "That we might be made the righteousness of God in him," where St. Paul says, that all Christians may be made the righteousness of God.

Mr. Brown, a celebrated Trinitarian Commentator, retains the common version of *Jeremiah*, xxiii. 6, and applies it to Jesus, whom he supposes to be "Jehovah our righteousness." But in ch. xxxiii. 16, where the construction in the original Hebrew is precisely the same, he alters it in the margin, "he who shall call her is Jehovah our righteousness," instead of applying the phrase "Jehovah our righteousness" to Jerusalem, in the same manner as he had applied it to Jesus in the former passage.—I therefore deem it necessary to give the original Hebrew of both texts, and a verbal translation of them. The reader will judge how strongly the judgment of the learned Commentator was biassed in support of a favourite doctrine. *Jer.*, xxiii. 6. וזה שמן אשר יקראן יהוה צדקנו תיסין הנושע יהודה וישראל ישכן לבטה "In his days shall be saved Judah, and Israel shall dwell in safety, and this his name which (man) shall call him, "Jehovah or righteousness." *Jeremiah*, xxxiii. 16, לבטה וזה אשר יקרא לה יהוה צדקנו גימים ההם תנושע יהודה וירושלם תשכון "In those days shall be saved Judah, and Jerusalem shall dwell in safety, and this (name) which (man) shall call her, Jehovah our righteousness."

In altering the common translation of the latter passage, Mr. Brown first disregards the stop after יקרא לה that is, "shall call her;" which by separating the two parts of the sentence, prevents Jehovah from being employed as the agent of the verb "shall call." 2ndly, He entirely neglects the established mode of construction, by leaving זה or "this," untranslated, and by omitting to point out the

name by which Jerusalem should be called 3rdly, He totally overlooks the idiom of the Hebrew, in which verbs are often employed unaccompanied with their agent, when no specific agent is intended, as appears from the following passages:—

Gen., xxv. 26, ואחדיכן וצא אחיו וידו אחזת בצקב עשו ויקדא שמו יעקב "And after that came his brother out and his hand took hold on Esau's heel, and (man) called his name Jacob." 2 *Samuel* ii. 16, בגבעון וידוקו איש בדאש דעהי וחדבו בצד רעהו ויככן תדו ויקדא למקום ההיוא חלקת האדים אשד "And they caught every one his fellow by the head, and thrust his sword in his fellow's side; so they fell down together: wherefore (man) called that place Helkath Hazurem, which is in Gibeon." *Genesis*, xvi. 14, על כן קדא לבאד באד כדי דאי "Wherefore (man) called the well Beer-lahai-roi."

They again adduce *Isaiah*, xlv. 23: "Unto me (God) every knee shall bow, every tongue shall swear"—compared with *Romans*, xiv. 10, 12: "But why dost thou judge thy brother? or why dost thou set at nought thy brother? For we shall all stand before the judgment-seat of Christ. For it is written, As I live, saith the Lord, every knee shall bow to me, and every tongue shall confess to God. So then every one of us shall give account of himself to God." Between the Prophet and the Apostle there is a perfect agreement in substance, since both declare that it is to God that every knee shall bow, and every tongue shall confess, through him before whose judgment-seat we shall all stand:—for at the same time both Jesus and his Apostles inform us, that we must stand before the judgment-seat of Christ, because the Father has committed the office of final judgment to him.—From this passage, they say, it appears that Jesus swore by himself, and that thereby he is proved to be God, according to the rule, that it is God only that can swear by himself. But how can they escape the context, which expressly informs us, that [illegible] Lord," (Jehovah,) and not Jesus, swore in this manner? We must not, however, overlook what the Apostle says in his epistle to the *Philippians*, ch. ii. 9—11, where he declares, that at the name of Jesus every knee shall bow and every tongue shall confess; but neither must we forget, that Jesus is declared to have been exalted to these honours by God, and that the only confession required is, that he is Lord, which office confession of his dignity is to the glory of God the Father. 9. "Wherefore God also hath highly *exalted* him, and

iven him a name which is above every name; 10. That at the name of Jesus every knee shall bow, of things in heaven, and things in earth, and things under the earth; 11. And that every tongue should confess that Jesus Christ is Lord, to the glory of God the Father."

Some have adopted a most extraordinary way of establishing the deity of Jesus. Any epithet or act, however common it may be, ascribed to God in the Sacred Writings, and also to Christ in the New Testament is adduced by them as a proof of his deity; and I observe with the utmost surprise, that the prejudice of many Christians in favour of the doctrine of the Trinity induces them to lay stress upon such sophisms. For instance, *Isaiah*, xliii. 3: "For I am the Lord thy God, the Holy one of Israel, thy Saviour," compared with 2 *Peter*, iii. 18, "Our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ." The conclusion they draw from these passages is, that unless Jesus were God, he could not be a Saviour: but how futile this reasoning is will clearly appear from the following passages: *Nehemiah*, ix. 27: "Thou gavest them saviours, who saved them." *Obed.*, 27: "And saviours shall come upon Mount Zion." 2 *Kings*, xiii. 5: "And the Lord gave Israel a saviour, so they went out from under the hand of the Syrians: and children of Israel dwelt in their tents, as beforetime." *Isaiah*, xix. 19, 20: "In that day shall there be an altar to the Lord in the midst of the land of Egypt, and a pillar at the border thereof to the Lord. And it shall be for a sign and for a witness unto the Lord of hosts in the land of Egypt: for they shall cry unto the Lord because of the oppressors, and he shall send them a saviour, and a great one, and he shall deliver them." If this argument possesses any force, then it would lead us to acknowledge the deity not only of Jesus, but that of those different individuals to whom the term "Saviours" or "Saviour" is applied in the above citations. The phrase in *Isaiah*, "Besides me there is no Saviour," is easily accounted for by considering, that all those who have been instrumental in effecting the deliverance of their fellow-creatures from evils of whatever nature, were dependent themselves upon God, and only instruments in his hands; and thus all appearance of inconsistence is removed.

Again, *Ps.*, xxiii. 1: "Jehovah is my Shepherd"—compared with *John*, x. 16: "And other sheep I have, which are not of this fold: them also I must bring, and they shall hear my voice: and there shall be one fold, and one Shepherd." In the former text, David declared God to be his shepherd or protector; in the latter, Jesus represents himself as

the one shepherd of the one fold of Christians, some of whom were already attached to him, and others were afterwards to become converts: but Trinitarian writers thus conclude from these passages: If Christ be not one with Jehovah, he could not be called a Shepherd, and thus there would be two shepherds: but a little reflection on the following passages will convince every unbiassed person, that Moses is called a shepherd in like manner, and his followers a flock; and that the term "Shepherd" is applied to others also, without conveying the idea of their unity with Jehovah. *Isaiah*, lxiii. 11: "Then he remembered the days of old, Moses and his people, saying, Where is he that brought them up out of the sea with the shepherd of his flock?" *Ezekiel*, xxxiv. 23, 24: "And *I will set up one shepherd* over them, and he shall feed them, even *my servant* David; he shall feed them, and he shall be their shepherd. And I the Lord will be their God, and my *servant David* a prince among them. I the Lord have spoken it." If they insist (though without any ground) upon interpreting the name David as put for Jesus, they must still attribute his shepherdship over his flock to divine commission, and must relinquish the idea of unity between God the employer, and the Messiah his *servant*. *Jeremiah*, xxiii. 4: "I will set up shepherds over them, which shall feed them: and they shall fear no more, nor be dismayed, neither shall they be lacking, saith the Lord."

Psalm, lxxviii. 56: "They tempted and provoked the most high God"—compared with 1 *Cor.*, x. 9, "Neither let us tempt Christ, as some of them also tempted." They thus conclude: the former passage declares the most high God to have been tempted by rebellious Israelites, and in the latter, Jesus is represented to have been the person tempted by some of them; consequently Jesus is the most high God. How far cannot prejudice lead astray men of sense! Is it not an insult to reason, to infer the deity of Jesus from the circumstance of his being in common with God, tempted by Israel and others? Are we not all, in common with Jesus, liable to be tempted both by men and by Satan? *Hebrews*, iv. 15, "For we have not an high priest who cannot be touched with the feeling of our infirmities; but was in all points *tempted like as we are*, yet without sin." *Genesis*, xxii. 1, "And it came to pass after these things that God did tempt Abraham." Can the liability to temptation common to God, to Jesus, to Abraham, and to all mankind, be of any avail to prove the divinity and unity of these respective subjects of temptation?

We find Moses in common with God is spoken against by the rebellious Israelites. *Numb.*, xxi. 5, "And the people (Israel) spoke against God, and against Moses." Are we to conclude upon this ground, that [because] God as well as Moses is declared to have been spoken against by Israel, that Moses therefore is God himself? In the same text quoted by them, we find the most high God provoked also—(they tempted and provoked the most high God)—so we find Moses and David provoked at different times. *Numbers*, xxi. 1, "And Satan stood up against Israel, and provoked David;" and *Psalm*, cvi. 32, 33, "It went ill with Moses for their sakes: because they provoked his spirit, so that he spake unadvisedly with his lips." Can any one from the circumstance of Moses and David having been the subjects of provocation, in common with God, be justified in attempting to prove the deity of either of them?

Isaiah, liv. 5: "Thy Maker is thine husband, the Lord of hosts is his name"—compared with *John*, iii. 29, "He that hath the bride is the bridegroom," &c. *Eph.*, v. 23, "For the husband is the head of the wife, even as Christ is the head of the Church," &c. From these they infer, that as the Church is one bride, so on the other hand, there is one husband, who is termed in one place God, and in another place Christ. My readers will be pleased to examine the language employed in these two instances: in the one, God is represented as the husband of all his creatures, and in the other, Christ is declared to be the husband or the head of his followers; there is therefore, an inequality of authority evidently ascribed to God and to Jesus. Moreover, Christ himself shews the relation that existed between him and his church, and himself and God, in *John* xv. 1: "I am the true vine, and my Father is the husbandman."—5. "I am the true vine, and my Father is the husbandman."—5. "I am the vine, ye are the branches." Would it not be highly unreasonable to set at defiance the distinction drawn by Jesus between God, himself, and his Church, and to attempt a conclusion directly contrary to his authority, and unsupported by revelation?

Revelation, xxii. 13: "I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end, the first and the last"—compared with *Isaiah*, xliv. 6: "Thus saith the Lord, the King of Israel, and his redeemer the Lord of hosts; I am the first, and I am the last; and besides me there is no God." From a comparison of these verses they conclude, that there is no God besides him who is the first and the last: but Jesus is the first and the

last: therefore besides Jesus there is no other God. I must embrace this opportunity of laying before my readers the context of the verse in Revelation, which will, I presume, shew to every unbiassed mind how the verse in question has been misapplied; since the verse cited in defence of the deity of Jesus, when considered in relation to the passages that precede and follow it, most clearly declares his inferiority and his distinct nature from the Father. *Revelation*, xxii. 6: "And he (the angel) said unto me, These sayings are faithful and true: and the Lord God of the holy prophets sent his angel to shew unto his servants the things which must shortly be done. 7. Behold I come quickly: blessed is he that keepeth the sayings of the prophecy of this book. 8. And I John saw these things and heard them. And when I had heard and seen, I fell down to worship before the feet of the angel who shewed me these things. 9. Then saith he unto me See thou do it not; for I am thy fellow-servant, and of thy brethren the prophets, and of them which keep the sayings of this book: worship God. 10. And he saith unto me, Seal not the sayings of the prophecy of this book: for the time is at hand. 11. He that is unjust, let him be unjust still: and he which is filthy let him be filthy still: and he that is righteous, let him be righteous still: and he that is holy, let him be holy still. 12. And, behold, I come quickly; and my reward is with me, to give every man according as his work shall be. 13. I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end, the first and the last. 14. Blessed are they that do *his* commandments, that they may have right to the tree of life, and may enter in through the gates into the city 15. For without are dogs, and sorcerers, and whoremongers, and murderers, and idolators, and whosoever loveth and maketh a lie. 16. I Jesus have sent mine angel to testify unto you these things in the churches. I am the root and the offspring of David, and the bright and morning star."

If they ascribe verse 13, ("I am Alpha and Omega," &c.,) to Jesus and not to the angel mentioned in the above passage, they must also unavoidably ascribe to Jesus the passage coming immediately before or after it, including of course verse the 9th, "Then saith he unto me, See thou do it not: for I am thy fellow-servant," &c., for there is but one agent described by the pronoun *He*" in the whole train of the verses above quoted who is pointed out clearly by the repetition of the phrase, "Behold I come quickly," in verses 7th

Alpha and Omega, &c.. yet must be considered as denying him the divine nature, and ranking him among the chosen servants of God, ("For I am thy fellow-servant.") If they ascribe all the verses of chap. xxii. as far as verse the 16th to the angel, they cannot justify themselves in founding their conclusion with regard to the deity of Jesus upon the force of verse the 13th, "I am Alpha and Omega," &c., which in the latter case can bear no relation to Christ, since their system requires them to apply it to an inferior angel. I beg the attention of my readers to five particular circumstances in this instance. 1st, That the angel whom the Lord sent, as intimated in verse the 6th, was intended to show his servants in general things that would shortly happen; and the angel sent by Jesus, as found in verse 16th, was to testify to John and other disciples the things relating to the churches 2ndly, Jesus declares in verse 16th, and in the subsequent verses, that he is the offspring of David, and that it is God that has the power of punishing any one who either takes away from or adds any thing to his revelation. 3rdly, That the passage in *Revelation*, xxii. 13, is not parallelled to that contained in the prophecy of *Isaiah*, xliv. 6, since the phrase "*Besides me there is no God*," which is found in the latter, and upon which the whole controversy turns, is not contained in the former. 4thly, That when the angel rejected the worship of John addressed to himself, he ordered him to worship God without mentioning the name either jointly or separately of the Lamb, by which Jesus is distinguished throughout the Revelation:—"Worship God," ver. 9. 5thly, In the very next verse, after the speaker, whether Jesus or an angel, describes himself as Alpha and Omega, he uses the expression, "Blessed are they that do *his* commandments," clearly indicating the existence of another being to whose *commandments* obedience is required.

It is worth noticing here, that the terms, "Alpha and Omega, beginning and end," are in a finite sense justly applicable to Jesus as the first of all created existences, and the last of those who will be required to resign the authority with which he is invested by the Father. See *Colossians*, i. 15, "The first-born of every creature;" 1 *Corinthians*, xv. 28, "Then shall the Son also himself be subject unto him that put all things under him."

Isaiah, xl. 10: "Behold, the Lord God will come with a strong hand, and his arm shall rule for him: behold, his reward is with him, and his work before him"—is compared with *Revelation*, xxii, 12, "I

come quickly; and my reward is with me." From the circumstance of the common application of the phrase, "his reward is with him," to God and to Jesus, they infer the deity of the latter; in answer to which I beg to refer my readers to the foregoing paragraphs illustrating verse 11th, which immediately precedes the verse in question of the *Revelation*, and also to *John*, v. 30, 32, "As I hear, I judge: and my judgment is just; because I seek not mine own will, but the will of the Father who hath sent me. The Father judgeth no man, but hath committed all judgment unto the Son;"—and to *Matthew*, xvi. 27, "For the Son of man shall come in the glory of his Father with his angels; and then he shall reward every man according to his works." Do not these passages point out evidently, that the power of exercising judgment and of distributing rewards *has been given* to Jesus by the Almighty, and that Jesus possesses this authority in behalf of the *Father* of the universe?

Ephesians, iv. 8: "When he (Christ) ascended up on high, he led captivity captive, and gave gifts unto men"—compared with *Psalm*, lxviii. 18, "Thou hast ascended on high, thou hast led captivity captive: thou hast received gifts for men, yea, for the rebellious also that the Lord God might dwell among them." The Jews are of opinion that David in this verse spoke of Moses, who, when he ascended to Mount Sinai, received gifts (i. e. the divine commandments) for men, even for the rebellious Israelites: in this case the Apostle Paul in his epistle, must have applied the verse in an accommodated sense to Jesus. The verse in the Psalm may be directly applied to Jesus, who, on his ascension, received gifts of pardon even for those who had rebelled against him. Mr. Brown, a celebrated Trinitarian Commentator, and several others, consider the 18th verse in this *Psalm*, and verse 8th in this chapter of *Ephesians*, as immediately applicable to Jesus as the Messiah. But another writer, Mr. Jones, with a view to establish the deity of Christ by a comparison of *Ephesians*, iv. 8, with *Psalm*, lxviii. 18, omits carefully the latter part of the verse, ("Thou hast received gifts for men, yea for the rebellious also, that the Lord God might dwell among them," which is altogether inapplicable to God, and quotes only the first part of the verse, (thou hast ascended on high, thou hast led captivity captive;") and thence draws this conclusion—"The Scripture here (in the Epistle referred to) expressly affirms the person who ascends, &c., to be the Lord God." From a view of the whole verse, the sense

must, according to this mode of reasoning, be as follows—"The person who ascended on high and who *received* gifts for men, *that the Lord God* might dwell among them, is the Lord God;" an interpretation, which as implying that the Lord God ascended and received gifts from a Being of course superior to himself, in order that he might dwell among men, is equally absurd and unscriptural.

Zechariah, xii. 10, as found in the English version: "In that day they shall look upon me whom they have pierced"—compared with *John*, xiv. 37; "They shall look on him whom they pierced;" from which comparison he has thus concluded—"As it stands in the Prophet, the Lord Jehovah was to be pierced; so that unless the man Christ who hung upon the cross was also the Lord Jehovah, the Evangelist is found to be a false witness, applying to him a prophecy that could not possibly be fulfilled in him." In order to shew the source of Mr. Jones's error, I beg to lay before my readers the verse in Hebrew, and a translation thereof from the Arabic Bible, as well as a correct translation into English.

וְשָׁפַרְתִּי עַל בֵּית דָּוִיד וְצַל יוֹשֵׁב יְרוּשָׁלַם רוּחַ חִי
וְתַחֲנוּנִים וְחַכִּישׁוּן אֲלִי אֵת אֲשֶׁר דָּקָרוּ וְסָפְדוּ עָלָיו כְּמִסְפֵּד
עַל הַיָּחִיד וְהָמַר עָלָיו כְּחָמַר עַל הַבְּכוֹר

واصب على بيت داود وعلى سكان اور شليم روح النعمة
والرافة وينظرون الي من اجل انهم رفضوا ويمو جون عليهم
مناحة مثل علي وحيد يتوجعون وجعا مثل علي بكر -

"And I will pour upon the house of David, and upon the inhabitants of Jerusalem, the spirit of grace and of supplication: and they shall look *toward me on account of him whom* they have pierced, and they shall mourn for him, as one mourneth for his own son and shall be in bitterness for him, as one that is in bitterness for his first-born."

This translation is strongly confirmed by the Septuagint, whose words I subjoin with a literal rendering—

Καὶ ἐπιβλέψονται πρός με, ἀνθ' ὧν κατωρχήσαντο.

"And they shall look *towards me*, on *account* of those whom they pierced."

In the prophet the Lord speaks of Israel at the approach of their restoration, when they will look up to God for mercy on account of their cruelty to the Messiah, whom they pierced, and for whom they will mourn and lament. Hence the prophecy in question has been fulfilled in Jesus, without representing the Lord (Jehovah) as the object pierced; and consequently no false testimony is chargeable upon John the Evangelist, who by changing the object of the verse from "me" found in the Hebrew and Septuagint, into "him," we may suppose, had in view the general import rather than the particular expressions of the prophecy, pointing out that they looked to the Messiah also, whom they had pierced. Without referring to the Hebrew phrase, which shows beyond doubt the inaccuracy of the English translation of the verse, common sense is, I presume, sufficient to show, that since in the last two clauses in the verse under consideration the Lord God speaks of the Messiah in the third person—("for him they [i. e. the Israelites] will mourn and lament,") he must be supposed to have spoken of the same third person as pierced by them unjustly, and thus to have pointed out the cause of their lamentation. If Jehovah had been pierced, he would have been mentioned in the first person, also as the object of lamentation and bitterness.

1 *Peter*, ii. 6: "Wherefore also it is contained in the Scripture, Behold, *I lay in Zion* a chief corner-stone, elect, precious: and he that believeth on him shall not be confounded. 7. Unto you therefore which believe he is precious: but unto them who are disobedient, the stone which the builders disallowed, the same is made the head of the corner, 8, And a stone of stumbling, and a rock of offence, even to them which stumble at the word, being disobedient; whereunto also they were appointed"—compared with *Isaiah*, xxviii. 16, "Therefore thus saith the Lord God, Behold *I lay in Zion* for a foundation, a stone, a tried stone, a precious corner-stone, a sure foundation; he that believeth shall not make haste;" and *Isaiah*, viii. 13, "Sanctify the Lord of hosts himself; let him be your fear, and let him be your dread. 14, And he shall be for a sanctuary; but for a stone of stumbling, and for a rock of offence, to both the houses of Israel; for a gin and for a snare to the inhabitants of Jerusalem."

These passages show, that the Lord God placed the Messiah as a

stone so exalted by the Almighty, stumbles at or sobeys him who has thus placed it. But Mr. Jones omits the words found in *Peter*, ii. 6. and *Isaiah*, xxviii. 16, "I lay in Zion a chief corner-stone precious," &c., which show the created nature of the Messiah, and after quoting a part of vers. 7 and 8 of 1 *Peter*, ch. ii. ("The stone which the builder disallowed, the same is made the head of the corner, and a stone of stumbling, and a rock of offence,") and only verse 13th and part of the 14th of ch. viii. of *Isaiah*, he has thus concluded:—"This stone of stumbling and rock of offence, as it appears from the latter text, (the text in *Peter*,) is no other than Christ, the same stone which the builders rejected. Therefore Christ is the Lord of hosts himself."—Here the Apostle *Peter*, in conformity with the Prophet, represents God as the founder of the corner-stone and Jesus as the same corner-stone, which though it be disallowed by the Jews, yet is *made* by the same founder, the head of the corner; but the Jews from their disobedience stumbled directly at the stone so exalted, rendering it a stone of stumbling and rock of offence; and hereby they stumbled secondarily at the founder of this stone, and offended the Lord God; who, though he was the rock of defence of Israel, (rock of refuge, *Psalm*, xciv. 24,) became a stone of stumbling and rock of offence.

Thus in *Luke*, x. 16, Jesus declares to his disciples, "He that despiseth you, despiseth me; and he that despiseth me, despiseth him that sent me;" intimating by these words, that contempt for the holy doctrines which Christ commissioned his disciples to teach, argued contempt for him by whom Christ himself was sent; but no one will thence infer the deity of those disciples. In vers. 6 and 7 in question, and in ver. 4 of the same chapter of *Peter*, ("To whom coming as unto a living stone, disallowed indeed of men, but chosen of God and precious,") Jesus is distinctly declared to be "*a* stone of stumbling," "*a* living stone chosen of God;" the indefinite article "a" here denoting that he is only one of many such stones. It is surprising that Mr. Jones could overlook these phrases, and conclude upon the identity of Jesus with God from metaphorical language which represents God as "a stumbling stone" of Israel, and Jesus a stumbling stone of those who never believed him. That there is nothing peculiar in Jesus being called a stone or a shepherd, see *Genesis*, xlix. 24, where in a metaphorical sense Joseph is called "the shepherd and the stone of Israel."

The Hebrew language, in common with other Asiatic tongues, frequently indulges in metaphor; and consequently the Old Testament,

written in that language, abounds with expressions which cannot be taken in their literal sense. This, indeed, Jesus himself points out in *John*, x. 34–36, in which he justifies the assumption of the title of Son of God to denote that he was sanctified and sent of the Father, by shewing that in the Scriptures the name even of God was sometimes metaphorically applied to men of power or exalted rank. Hence we find epithets which in their strict sense in their most common application are peculiar to God, applied to inferior beings, as I have already noticed. But the Scripture avoids affording the least pretext of misunderstanding the real nature of such objects, by various adjuncts and epithets of obvious meaning, quite inapplicable to the Deity. It is melancholy, however, to observe, how frequently men overlook the idiom of the language of Scripture, and (apparently misled by the force of preconceived notions) set aside every expression that modifies those that suit their peculiar ideas.

Were we to admit common phrases applied both to God and to Jesus as a proof of the divinity of the latter, we must upon the same ground be led to acknowledge the deity of Moses, of David, and of other Prophets, who are in common with God, the subjects of peculiar phrases. Moses in *Deut.*, xxx, 15, declares, "See I have set before thee this day life and good, and death and evil." So Jehovah declares in *Jeremiah*, xxi. 8, "Behold, I set before you the way of life, and the way of death." In conformity to this mode of argument adopted by Trinitarian writers, we should thus conclude from these passages—unless Moses were one with Jehovah, he could not in his own name employ the same authoritative phrase which is used by Jehovah. In the same manner the term 'worship' is equally applied to God and David in *Chronicles*, xxix. 20, "And David said to all the congregation, Now bless the Lord your God. And all the congregation blessed the Lord, God of their fathers, and bowed down their heads, and worshipped the Lord and the king." Whence, according to their mode of argument, every one must find himself justified in drawing the following conclusion: God is the only object of worship—but the term 'worship' is in the Bible applied to David—David must therefore be acknowledged as God.

I have now noticed all the arguments founded on scripture that I have heard of as advanced in support of the doctrine of the Trinity, except such as appeared to me so futile as to be unworthy of remark; and in the course of my examination have plainly stated the grounds

on which I conceive them to be inadmissible. Perhaps my opinions may subject me to the severe censure of those who dissent from me, and some will be ready to discover particular motives for my presuming to differ from the great majority of Christian teachers of the present day in my view of Christianity, with the doctrines of which I have become but recently acquainted. Personal interest can hardly be alleged as likely to have actuated me, and therefore the love of distinction or notoriety may perhaps be resorted to, to account for conduct which they wish it to be believed honest conviction could never direct. In reply to such an accusation, I can only protest in the most solemn manner, that even in the belief that I have been successful in combating the doctrine of Trinitarians, I cannot assume to myself the smallest merit:—for what credit can be gained in proving that one is not three, and that the same being cannot be at once man and God; or in opposing those who maintain, that all who do not admit doctrines so incomprehensible must be therefore subjected by the All-merciful to eternal punishment? It is too true to be denied, that we are led by the force of the senses to believe many things that we cannot fully understand. But where the evidence of sense does not compel us, how can we believe what is not only beyond our comprehension, but contrary to it and to the common course of nature, and directly against revelation; which declares positively the Unity of God as well as his incomprehensibility; but nowhere ascribes to him any number of persons, or any portion of magnitude? *Job*, xxxvi. 26, "Behold, God is great, and we know him not." Ch. xxxvii. 23, "Touching the Almighty, we cannot find him out." *Psalm*, cxiv. 3, "His greatness is unsearchable." Neither are my attempts owing to a strong hope of removing early impressions from the breasts of those whose education instilled certain ideas into their minds from the moment they became capable of receiving them; for notwithstanding great and long-continued exertions on my part to do away Hindoo polytheism, though palpably gross and absurd, my success has been very partial. This experience, therefore, it may be suggested, ought to have been sufficient to discourage me from any other attempt of the kind; but it is my reverence for Christianity, and for the author of this religion, that has induced me to endeavour to vindicate it from the charge of polytheism as far as my limited capacity and knowledge extend. It is indeed mortifying to my feelings to find a religion, that from its sublime

doctrines and pure morality should be respected above all other systems, reduced almost to a level with Hindoo theology, merely by human creeds and prejudices, and from this cause brought to a comparison with the Paganism of ancient Greece: which, while it included a plurality of Gods, yet maintained that Θεὸς ἐστὶ ἓις, or "God is one," and that their numerous divine *persons* were all comprehended in that one Deity.

Having derived my own opinions on this subject entirely from the Scriptures themselves, I may perhaps be excused for the confidence with which I maintain them against those of so great a majority, who appeal, to the same authority for theirs; inasmuch as I attribute the different views, not to any inferiority of judgment compared with my own limited ability, but to the powerful effects of early religious impression; for when these are deep, reason is seldom allowed its natural scope in examining them to the bottom. Were it a practice among Christians to study first the books of the Old Testament as found arranged in order, and to acquire a knowledge of the true force of scriptural phrases and expressions without attending to interpretations given by any sect; and then to study the New Testament, comparing the one with the other, Christianity would not any longer be liable to be encroached upon by human opinions.

I have often observed that English divines, when arguing with those that think freely on religion, quote the names of Locke and Newton as defenders of Christianity; but they totally forget that the Christianity which those illustrious persons professed, did not contain the doctrine of the Trinity, which our divines esteem as the fundamental principle of this religion. For the conviction of the public as to the accuracy of this assertion, I beg to be allowed to extract here a few lines of their respective works, referring my readers to their publications upon religion for more complete information

Locke's Works, Vol. VII. p. 421: "But that neither he nor others may mistake my book, this is that in short which it says—1st, That there is a faith that makes men Christians—2ndly, That this faith is the believing 'Jesus of Nazareth to be the Messiah'—3rdly, That the believing Jesus to be the Messiah, includes in it a receiving him for our Lord and King, promised and sent from God, and so lays upon all his subjects an absolute and indispensible necessity of assenting to all that they can attain of the knowledge that he taught, and of sincere obedience to all that he commanded."

Sir I. Newton's Observations upon the Prophecies, p. 262: "The Beasts and Elders therefore represent the Christians of all nations; and the worship of these Christians in their churches is here represented under the form of worshipping God and the Lamb in the Temple, God for his benefaction in creating all things, and the Lamb for his benefaction in redeeming us with his blood:—God as sitting upon the throne and living for ever, and the Lamb exalted above all by the merits of his death."

It cannot be alleged that these personages, in imitation of several Grecian philosophers, published these sentiments only in conformity to the vulgar opinion, and to the established religion of their country; for both the vulgar opinion and the religion of the government of England in their days were directly opposite to the opinions which these celebrated men entertained.

The mention of the name of Sir Isaac Newton, one of the greatest mathematicians (if not the greatest) that ever existed, has brought into my recollection a mathematical argument which I some time ago heard a divine adduce in support of the Trinity, and which I feel inclined to consider here though I am afraid some of my readers may censure me for repeating an argument of this kind. It is as follows: that as three lines compose one triangle, so three persons compose one Deity. It is astonishing that a mind so conversant with mathematical truth as was that of Sir Isaac Newton, did not discover this argument in favour of the possible existence of a Trinity, brought to light by Trinitarians, considering that it must have lain so much in his way. If it did occur to him, its force may possibly have given way to some such considerations as the following:—This analogy between the Godhead and a triangle in the first instance, denies to God, equally with a line, any real existence: for extension of all kinds, abstracted from position or relative situation, exist only in idea. Secondly, It destroys the unity which they attempt to establish between Father, Son, and Holy Ghost; for the three sides of a triangle are convinced of as separate existences. Thirdly, It denies to each of the three persons of God, the epithet "God," inasmuch as each side cannot be designated a triangle; though the Father of the universe is invariably called God in the strict sense of the term. Fourthly, It will afford to that sect among Hindoos who suppose God to consist of four persons, or चतुर्मूर्त्तात्मक an opportunity of using the same mode of arguing, to shew the reasonableness of their sentiments, by comparing

the compound Deity with the four sides of a quadrilateral figure. Fifthly, This manner of arguing may be esteemed better adopted to support the polytheism of the majority of Hindoos, who believe in numerous persons under one Godhead; for instead of comparing the Godhead with a triangle, a figure containing the fewest sides, and thereby proving the three persons of the Godhead, they might compare God with a polygon, more suitable to the dignified rank of the Deity, and thus establish the consistency with reason of the belief, that the Godhead may be composed of numerous persons. Sixthly, This mode of illustration would, in fact, equally suit the Atheist as the Polytheist. For as the Trinity is represented by the three sides of a triangle, so the eternal revolution of nature without any divine person may be compared to the circle, which is considered as having no sides nor angles; or, Seventhly, As some great mathematicians consider the circle as a polygon, having an infinite number of sides, the illustration of the Trinitarian doctrine by the form of the triangle will by analogy justify those sects, who maintain the existence of an infinite number of persons in the Godhead, in referring for an illustration of their opinions to the circular, or rather perhaps to the globular figure, in which is to be found an infinity of circles, formed each of an infinite number of sides.

As I was concluding this Appendix, a friend to the doctrine of the Trinity kindly lent me Serle's "Horæ solitariæ." I confine here my attention only to four or five arguments, which the author has adduced in the beginning of his work, and that for several reasons. 1st, Because a deliberate attention to the nature of the first-mentioned arguments may furnish the reader with a general idea of the rest, and justify me in neglecting them. 2ndly, Because such of the others as seem to me at all worthy of notice have been already considered and replied to; and, 3rdly, Because I am unwilling to protract further discussion, which has already grown to a length far beyond my original intention.

At page 10, Mr. Serle alleges, that "God says by Moses in the book of Genesis, In the beginning God created the heaven and the earth; and then just afterwards, the Spirit moved upon the face of the waters. Here are three persons in one power; the Beginning, God, and the Spirit." If a bare mention of the word "beginning" and "spirit," (or properly speaking "wind,") in the first two verses of Genesis, justifies the numbering of them as two persons of God, how

can we conscientiously omit the "water" mentioned in the same verse as co-existent with "spirit," making it the fourth person, and "darkness" which is mentioned before Spirit, as a fifth person of God: and if under any pretence we are justified in classing "beginning," an abstract relation, as a person of God, how can we deny the same dignity to the "end," which is equally an abstract relation? Nay, the very words of chap. I. 8, of Revelation might be quoted to prove one of the persons of God to be the "ending;"—"I am Alpha and Omega, the BEGINNING and the ENDING, saith the Lord, which is, and which was, and which is to come, the Almighty." We have, then, God, the Beginning, the Spirit, and the Ending, four persons at least whom we must admit into the Godhead, if Mr. Serle's opinion have any foundation.

Page 12: "They (the ancient Chaldee Jews and Cabalists) expressed their idea of the Trinity by this particular type, יהוה where the three jods denote Jah, Jah, Jah, or that each of three persons (according to our Athanasian creed) is by himself Jah or Lord:—the point ָ (kametz) as common to each, implies the divine nature in which the three persons equally existed; and the circle, enclosing all was intended to exhibit the perfect unity, eternity, and conjunction, of the whole Trinity." This type, if it existed at any time, can bear various interpretations, Theistical, Polytheistical, or Atheistical; but in Hebrew and Chaldee, the sign which is generally used to denote the Deity has two jods only; a reference to the Targums of Jonathan and Onkelos, written in the Chaldee language, and to other Targums in Hebrew and Chaldee, will establish the fact beyond doubt. This practice, which, according to Mr. Serle's mode of arguing, establishes the duality of God, is entirely overlooked by him.

In the same page again he says, that "in a very ancient book of the Jews, the first person, or Hypostasis, is described as כתר Kather, the crown, or admirable and profound intelligence; the second person חכמה Chochma, wisdom, or the intelligence illuminating the creation, and the second glory: and the third person גיגה Binah or the sanctifying intelligence, the worker of faith and the father of it." He immediately after this assertion notices in page 13, "they believed, taught, and adored three primordial existences in the Godhead, which they called sometimes מדות middoth, or *properties*, and sometimes ספירות sephiroth, or *numerations*." The force of truth here impels the author to contradict himself directly; since he

at one time asserts that the Jews believed them to be the *three* persons of God, and again forgetting what he said, he affirms tha the Jews called them *properties*, or *numeration* of properties. The fact is, that when the intercourse between the Jews and Greeks was great, the former, in imitation of the latter, entertained the idea that the Supreme Deity used ten superior intelligences or qualities in the creation of the world; namely, כתר Crown—חכמה Wisdom—בינה Understanding—גדלה Greatness—גבורה Mightiness—תפארת Beauty—נצח Everlasting—הוד Glory—יסוד Foundation—מלכות Kingdom.* But a Godhead consisting of ten persons not suiting Mr. Serle's hypothesis, he omits the last seven, and mentions only the first three, which he denominates a proof of the Trinity.

In page 14, Mr. Serle represents "R. Simeon and the famous Jonathan treating upon the Trisagion, or thrice holy, in the 6th chapter of *Isaiah*," as saying "that the first Holy implies the Father, the second Holy the Son and the third Holy the Holy Ghost." I therefore give the commentary of Jonathan,† which I have been so fortunate as to procure, in order to shew how zeal in behalf of the Trinity has sometimes led men to forget the claims of care and prudence. Jonathan's Targum on the tern. "Holy," thrice repeated n *Isaiah*, vi. 3, is as follows:—

קריש בשמי מרומא עלאה בית שכנתיה קדיש אף
ארעא עובד גבורתיה קריש לעלם ולעלמי עלמיא

"Holy in the most high heavens, the place of his glory—Holy upon the earth, the work of his power—Holy for ever and ever and ever."

Again, in page 14, he says, that "The Jews before Christ had a title for the Godhead consisting of twelve letters, which Maimonides, the most learned of all their writers, owns to have been a compounded name, or name (as was common among the Rabbins) composed of the initial letters of other names. Galatinus from R. Hakkadosh, (who lived about A. D. 150, or rather from Porchetus, Salvaticus, or Raymundus Martini,) believes that these twelve letters were אב, גן זרזה הקרש, i. e. Father, Son, and Holy Spirit."

* This opinion is still to be found in the conversation as well as writings of the learned amongst Eastern theologians.

† The copy which is now in my hands was printed in London, by Thomas Roycroft, n the year 1656. It contains, besides the Targum of Jonathan, the original Hebrew text, together with the Septuagint, Syriac, and Arabic translations, each accompanied with a Latin interpretation.

There is no impossibility in the existing of a name of God consisting of twelve letters, as is stated to have been the case on the authority of Maimonides, because we find different names of God, consisting of various numbers of letters But Mr. Serle, on the authority of Galatinus, a Christian writer, represents these twelve letters as expressing the names of Father, Son, and Holy Spirit I therefore make a few remarks on this head 1st, Mr Serle himself expresses his doubts respecting the source from which Galatinus had obtained his information, "*whether from R. Hakkadosh, from Porchetus Salvaticus, or from Raymundus Martini.*" 2ndly, The construction of this sentence of twelve letters is conformable to the European style of writing, but is quite foreign to Hebrew idiom, which requires a conjunction expressed before בן or Son; but the omission of this shews that it must have been invented by one more accustomed to the idiom of European languages, than to that of the Hebrew. 3rdly, Maimonides, the original authority of Mr Serle, owns that these twelve letters were the initials of other names, whereas Mr. Serle in the explanation of them represents them as composing in themselves three complete names, Father, Son and Holy Spirit, instead of giving a name for each of the twelve letters

I am not aware how many arguments and illustrations of similar weight and importance to those already discussed may still remain, that have not been brought to my notice; but I trust the inquiry has proceeded sufficiently far to justify me in still adhering to the unity of God as the doctrine taught alike in the Old and in the New Testaments.

I now conclude this Appendix, with repeating my prayer, that a day may soon arrive, when religion shall not be a cause of difference between man and man, and when every one will regard the Precepts of Jesus as the sole Guide to Peace and happiness.

POSTSCRIPT.

DR. PRIDEAUX, in the fourth volume of his "Connection," (which has very lately come into my hands,) takes a different view of Isaiah, ch. ix. vers. 6, 7, from that which has been offered in the preceding pages. After quoting the words of the prophet according to the English Version, he says, "Christians all hold that this is spoken of the Messiah; and Jonathan, in the Targum which is truly his, doth on that place say the same." Hereby he gives out that this prophecy, including the epithets "Wonderful Counsellor, the Mighty God, the Everlasting Father, and the Prince of Peace," is applied by Jonathan, as by Christians, to the Messiah:—I therefore give here the explanation given by Jonathan to verses 6 and 7, which will sufficiently shew the error Dr. Prideaux has committed.

אמד נביא לבית דוד אדי דכי אתיליד לנא בד אתיהיב לנא וקביל אוריתא עלדהו למיהוי עסיק באוריתא ואתקדי שמיה מן קדם מתליא עצה אלהא גבורא קים לעלמיא משיהא דישלמא יהי עלנא ביומוהי: סגי סגי דבן לעבדן אוריתא ולנטרי שלמא ליתסוף על כורסי דוד ועל מלכותיה לאתקנא יתה ולסבורה בדינא ובזכותא מכען וצד צלמא בסימרא דיי צבאות תתעבד דא:

"The prophet says, to the house of David a child is born, to us a son is given, and he will take upon himself the preservation of the law; from the presence of the causer of wonderful counsels, the great God enduring for ever, his name will be called the anointed, (in Heb. Messiah) in whose days peace shall be multiplied upon us." "Greatness shall be multiplied to those who obey the law, and to those who keep peace, there will be no end to the throne of David and of his government: for establishing and for building it with judgment and with justice now and for ever."

Here Jonathan, in direct opposition to Christians, denies to the son so born the epithets "Wonderful Counsellor, Mighty God, and Everlasting Father;" and applies to him only the title of "The Prince of Peace," (nearly synonymous with Messiah,) on account of

his preserving peace during his reign as was promised of the Messiah. (2 *Kings*, xx. 19: "Is it not good (says Hezekiah) if peace and truth be in my days?" 2 *Chron.*, xxxii 26: "The wrath of the Lord came not upon them in the days of Hezekiah.") This application of the term anointed (or Messiah) is made to Hezekiah in the same manner as to other eminent kings, often called Messiah in the Sacred Writings:—1 *Samuel*, xii. 3: "Behold, here I am! witness against me before the Lord, and his anointed, (or his Messiah,) the king." 2 *Samuel*, xxiii. 1: "David the son of Jesse said, and the man who was raised up on high, the Messiah of the God of Jacob," &c. Ch. xxii. 51: "He is the tower of salvation for his king, and sheweth mercy to his Messiah, unto David, and to his seed for evermore." 1 *Samuel*, ii. 10: "The Lord shall judge the ends of the earth; and he shall give strength unto his king, and exalt the horn of his Messiah." *Psalm*, xx. 6: "Now know I that the Lord saveth his Messiah." *Isaiah*, xlv. 1: "Thus saith the Lord to his Messiah, to Cyrus." The reign of Hezekiah was so accompanied with peace and success, that some Jewish commentators entertained the opinion that Hezekiah was really the last Messiah promised by God.

R. Hillel,—

אמך דבי הכל אין להם משיה לישראל שכבר אכלוהן בימי חזקיה:

"There is no Messiah for the Israelites, for they enjoined it (i. e. they had him) at the time of Hezekiah."

If Trinitarians still insist in defiance of the above authorities, and under pretence of the word "anointed" or "Messiah," found in the Targum of Jonathan, that his interpretation should be understood of the expected Messiah, then, as far as depends upon the interpretation given by him of verses 6 and 7, they must be compelled to relinquish the idea that he expected a divine deliverer. Moreover, all other celebrated Jewish writers, some of whom are more ancient than Jonathan, apply the passage in question to Hezekiah, some of them differing, however, from him in the application of the epithets contained in verse 6.

Talmud, Sanhedrim, ch. 11, "God said, let Hezekiah, who has five names, take vengeance upon the king of Assyria, who has taken upon himself five names also." R. Sholomo follows the annotation made by Shammai. "For a child is born, &c. Though Ahaz was wicked, his son, who was born to him to be a king in his stead, shall

be righteous, the government of God and his yoke shall be on thi shoulder, because he shall obey the law and keep the commandments thereof, and shall incline his shoulder to the burthen of God.—And he calls his name, &c. God, who is the wonderful counsellor, and the mighty and everlasting Father, called his name the Prince of Peace, for peace and truth shall be in his days."*

The reader will not suppose the application of the terms "wonderful counsellor, mighty God, everlasting Father, and prince of peace," to Hezekiah, to be unscriptural, when he refers to page 216 of this work, and considers the following passages, in which the same epithets are used for human beings and even for inanimate objects. 2 Chron., ii. 9, "The house which I am about to build shall be wonderful great." Micah, iv. 9, "Is there no king in thee? Is thy counsellor perished?" Genesis, xxiii. 6, "Hear us: thou art a mighty Prince amongst us." Judges, ix. 13, "Should I leave my wine which cheereth God and man?" that is, master and servant. 2 Thess., ii. 4. "Who opposeth and exalteth himself above all that is called God." Gen., xlix. 26, "To the utmost bound of the everlasting hills." I Samuel, iv. 8, "Who shall deliver us out of the hands of these mighty gods?" which Cruden interprets of the Jewish ark. Isaiah, xliii. 28, "Therefore I have profaned the princes of the sanctuary."

I wonder how those who found their opinion respecting the Trinity on terms applied in common to God and creatures, can possibly overlook the plain meaning of the term "Son," or "Only-begotten," continually applied to the Saviour throughout the whole of the New Testament; for should we understand the term God, in its strict sense, as denoting the First Cause, (that is a being not born nor begotten,) we must necessarily confess that the idea of God is as incompatible with the idea of the "Son," or "Only-begotten," as entity is with non-entity; and therefore that to apply both terms to the same being will amount to the grossest solecism in language.

* It is worth noticing, that "to be called" and "to be" do not invariably signify the same thing; since the former does not always imply that the thing is in reality what it is called, but the use of it is justified when the thing is merely *taken notice of* in that view. See Luke, i. 36, "This is the sixth month with her who was called (that is, accounted) barren." Isaiah, lxi. 3. "That they might be called (or accounted) trees of righteousness." This is more especially the case when the phrase "to be called" has for its subject not a person, but the *name* of a person See Deut, xxv. 10, "And his name shall be called in Israel. *the house of him that* hath his shoe loosed," Genesis. xlviii, 16. "Let my name be named on them."

As to their assertion, that there are found in the Scriptures two sets of terms and phrases, one declaring the humanity of Jesus, and another his deity, and that he must therefore be acknowledged to have possessed a twofold nature, human and divine, I have fully noticed it in other places pointing out such passages as contain two sets of terms and phrases applied also to Moses and even to the chiefs of Israel and to others; and that if it is insisted upon, that each word in the Sacred Writings should be taken in its strict sense, Moses and others, equally with the Saviour, must be considered as gods, and the religion of the Jews and Christians will appear as Polytheistical as that of Heathens.

Although there is the strictest consistency between all the passages in the sacred books, Trinitarians with a view to support their opinion, charge them first with inconsistency, and then attempt to reconcile the alleged contradiction by introducing the doctrine of the union of two natures, divine and human, in one person, forgetting that at the same time the greatest incongruity exists between the nature of God and man, according to both revelation and common sense.

If Christianity inculcated a doctrine which represents God as consisting of three persons, and appearing sometimes in the human form, at other times in a bodily shape like a dove, no Hindoo, in my humble opinion, who searches after truth, can conscientiously profess it in preference to Hindooism; for that which renders the modern Hindoo system of religion absurd and detestable, is that it represents the divine nature, though one (एक ब्रह्म), as consisting of many persons, capable of assuming different forms for the discharge of different offices. I am, however, most firmly convinced, that Christianity is entirely free from every trace of Polytheism, whether gross or refined. I therefore enjoy the approbation of my conscience in publishing the Precepts of this religion as the sources of Peace and Happiness.

FINAL APPEAL

TO

THE CHRISTIAN PUBLIC

IN DEFENCE OF

"THE PRECEPTS OF JESUS."

BY

RAMMOHUN ROY.

1823

PREFACE

NOTWITHSTANDING the apprehension of exciting displeasure in the breasts of many worthy men, I feel myself obliged to lay before the public at large this my self-defence, entitled "A FINAL APPEAL to the Christian Public." I, however, confidently hope that the liberal among them will be convinced, by a reference to the first part of this Essay, and to my two former Appeals, that the necessity of self-vindication against the charge of being an "injurer of the cause of truth," has compelled me, as a warm friend of that cause, to bring forward my reasons for opposing the opinions maintained by so large a body of men highly celebrated for learning and piety—a consideration which, I trust, will induce them to regard my present labours with an eye of indulgence.

I am well aware that this difference of sentiment has already occasioned much coolness towards me in the demeanour of some whose friendship I hold very dear; and that this protracted controversy has not only prevented me from rendering my humble services to my countrymen by various publications which I had projected in the native languages, but has also diverted my attention from all other literary pursuits for three years past. Notwithstanding these sacrifices, I feel well satisfied with my present engagements, and cannot wish that I had pursued a different course: since, whatever may be the opinion of the world, my own conscience fully approves of my past endeavours to defend what I esteem the cause of truth.

In my present vindication of the unity of the Deity, as revealed through the writings of the Old and New Testaments, I appeal not only to those who sincerely believe in the books of revelation, and make them the standard of their faith and practice, and who must, therefore, deeply feel the great importance of the divine oracles being truly interpreted; but I also appeal to those who, although indifferent about religion, yet devote their minds to the investigation and discovery of truth, and who will, therefore, not think it unworthy of their attention to ascertain what are the genuine doctrines of Christianity as taught by Christ and his apostles, and how much it has

been corrupted by the subsequent intermixture of the polytheistical ideas that were familiar to its Greek and Roman converts and which have continued to disfigure it in succeeding ages. I extend my appeal yet further; I solicit the patient attention of such individuals as are rather unfavourable to the doctrines of Christianity as generally promulgated, from finding them at variance with common sense, that they may examine and judge whether its doctrines are really such as they are understood to be by the popular opinion which now prevails.

I feel assured that if religious controversy be carried on with that temper and language which are considered by wise and pious men as most consistent with the solemn and sacred nature of religion, and more especially with the mild spirit of Christianity, the truths of it cannot, for any length of time, be kept concealed under the imposing veil of high-sounding expressions, calculated to astonish the imagination and rouse the passions of the people, and thereby keep alive and strengthen the preconceived notions with which such language has in their minds been, from infancy, associated. But I regret that the method which has hitherto been observed in inquiry after religious truth, by means of large publications, necessarily issued at considerable intervals of time, is not, for several reasons, so well adapted to the speedy attainment of the proposed object, as I, and other friends of true religion, could wish. These reasons are as follows:—

1st. Many readers have not sufficient leisure or perseverance to go through a voluminous essay, that they may make up their minds and come to a settled opinion on the subject.

2ndly. Those who have time at their command, and interest themselves in religious researches, finding the real point under discussion mixed up with injurious insinuations and personalities, soon feel discouraged from proceeding further, long before they can come to a determination.

3rdly. The multiplicity of arguments and various interpretations of numerous scriptural passages, that bear often no immediate relation to the subject, or to each other, introduced in succession, distract and dishearten such readers as are not accustomed to Biblical studies, and interrupt their further progress.

As Christianity is happily not a subject resting on vague metaphysical speculations, but is founded upon the authority of books written in languages which are understood and explained according

to known and standing rules. I therefore propose, with a view to the more speedy and certain attainment of religious truth, to establish a monthly periodical publication, commencing from the month of April next, to be devoted to Biblical Criticism, and to subject Unitarian as well as Trinitarian doctrines to the test of fair argument, if those of the latter persuasion will consent thus to submit the scriptural grounds on which their tenets concerning the Trinity are built.

For the sake of method and convenience, I propose that, beginning with the Book of Genesis, and taking all the passages in that portion of Scripture, which are thought to countenance the doctrine of the Trinity, we should examine them one by one, and publish our observations upon them; and that next month we proceed in the same manner with the Book of Exodus, and so on with all the Books of the Old and New Testaments, in their regular order.

If any one of the Missionary Gentlemen, for himself, and in behalf of his fellow-labourers, choose to profit by the opportunity thus afforded them, of defending and diffusing the doctrines they have undertaken to preach, I request, that an Essay on the Book of Genesis, of the kind above intimated, may be sent me by the middle of the month and if confined within reasonable limits, not exceeding a dozen or sixteen pages, I hereby engage to cause it to be printed and circulated at my own charge, should the Missionary Gentlemen refuse to bestow any part of the funds intended for the spread of Christianity towards this object: and also, that a reply (not exceeding the same number of pages) to the arguments adduced, shall be published along with it by the beginning of the ensuing month. That this new mode of controversy, by short monthly publications, may be attended with all the advantages which, I, in common with other searchers after truth, expect, and of which it is capable, it will be absolutely necessary that nothing be introduced, of a personal nature, or calculated to hurt the feelings of individuals—that we avoid all offensive expressions, and such arguments as have no immediate connection with the subject, and can only serve to retard the progress of discovery; and that we never allow ourselves for a moment to forget that we are engaged in a solemn religious disputation.

As religion consists in a code of duties which the creature believes he owes to his Creator, and as "God has no respect for persons; but in *every nation*, he that fears him and *works righteousness*, is accepted with him;" it must be considered presumptuous and unjust for

one man to attempt to interfere with the religious observances of others, for which he well knows, he is not held responsible by any law, either human or divine. Notwithstanding, if mankind are brought into existence, and by nature formed to enjoy the comforts of society and the pleasures of an improved mind, they may be justified in opposing any system, religious, domestic, or political, which is inimical to the happiness of society, or calculated to debase the human intellect; bearing always in mind that we are children of ONE Father, "who is above *all* and through *all* and in us *all*."

Calcutta, January 30, 1823.

NOTICE.*

ALL the preceding works of the author on the subject of Christianity were printed at the Baptist Mission Press, Calcutta; but the acting proprietor of that press having, since the publication of the Second Appeal, declined, although in the politest manner possible, printing any other work that the author might publish on the same subject, he was under the necessity of purchasing a few types for his own use, and of depending principally upon native superintendence for the completion of the greater part of this work This must form an apology to the public for the imperfections that may appear in its typographical execution.

* This notice appeared in the First Edition, published in Calcutta.—ED.

FINAL APPEAL.*

CHAPTER I.

Introductory Remarks.

NEARLY a month having elapsed after the publication of the fourth number of the quarterly series of the "Friend of India," before it happened to reach me, and other avocations and objects having subsequently engaged my attention, I have not till lately had leisure to examine the laborious essay on the doctrines of the Trinity and Atonement, at the conclusion of that Magazine, offered in refutation of my "Second Appeal to the Christian Public." For the able and condensed view of the arguments in support of those doctrines which that publication presents, I have to offer the Reviewer my best thanks, though the benefit I have derived from their perusal is limited to a corroboration of my former sentiments. I must, at the same time, beg permisson to notice a few unjust insinuations in some parts of his Essay: but in so doing, I trust, no painful emotions, neither of that salutary kind alluded to by the Editor, nor of any other, will make their appearance in my remarks.

The Rev. Editor charges me with the arrogance of taking upon myself "to teach doctrines directly opposed to those held by the mass of real Christians in every age." To vindicate myself from the presumption with which I am here charged, and to shew by what necessity I have been driven to the publication of opinions unacceptable to many esteemed characters, I beg to call the attention of the public to the language of the Introduction to "The Precepts of Jesus," compiled by me, and which was my first publication connected with Christianity. They may observe therein, that, so far from teaching any "opposite doctrines," of "rejecting the prevailing opinions held by the great body of Christians," I took every precaution against giving the least offence to the prejudices of any one, and consequently

* The Final Appeal was published in reply to the elaborate answer to the Second Appeal, by Dr. Marshman, printed in the fourth number of the Quarterly Series of the Friend of India, December, 1821.—ED.

limited my labour to what I supposed best calculated for the improvement of those whose received opinions are widely different from those of Christians. My words are—"I decline entering into any discussions on those points, (the dogmas of Christianity,) and confine my attention at present to the task of laying before my fellow-creatures the words of Christ, with a translation from the English into Sanscrit and the language of Bengal. I feel persuaded that, by separating from the other matters contained in the New Testament the moral precepts found in that book, these will be likely to produce the desirable effects of improving the hearts and minds of men of different persuasions and degrees of understanding."—(Introduction, p. 4.) The Precepts of Jesus, which I was desirous of teaching, were not, I hoped, "opposed to the doctrines held by the mass of real Christians," nor did my language in the Introduction imply the "rejection of those truths which the great body of the learned and pious have concurred in deeming fully contained in the sacred Scriptures."

Notwithstanding all this precaution, however, I could not evade the reproach and censure of the Editor, who not only expressed, in the "Friend of India," No. 20, his extreme disapprobation of the compilation in a manner calculated more to provoke than lead to search after truth but also indulged himself in calling me an injurer of the cause of truth. Disappointed as I was, I took refuge in the liberal protection of the public, by appealing to them against that unexpected attacks of the Editor. In that appeal I carefully avoided entering into any discussion as to the doctrines held up as the fundamental principles of Christianity by the Editor. The language of my first appeal is this: "Humble as he (the Compiler) is, he has therefore adopted those measures which he thought most judicious to spread the truth in an acceptable manner; but I am sorry to observe that he (the Compiler) has unfortunately and unexpectedly met with opposition from those whom he considered the last persons likely to oppose him on this subject." (Page 91). "Whether or not he (the Compiler) has erred in his judgment, that point must be determined by those who will candidly peruse and consider the arguments already advanced on this subject, bearing in mind the lesson particularly taught by the Saviour himself, of adapting his instructions to the susceptibility and capacity of his hearers. John, xvi. 12: 'I have yet many things to say unto you, but ye cannot bear them now.'" (Page 92.) "What benefit or peace of mind can we bestow upon a Musalman, who is an entire stranger to the Christian

world, by communicating to him, without preparatory instruction, all the peculiar dogmas of Christianity?" (Page 92.) "The Compiler, having obviously in view at least one object in common with the Reviewer and Editor, that of procuring respect for the precepts of Christ, might have reasonably expected more charity from professed teachers of his doctrine." (Page 80.) In reviewing the First Appeal, the Reverend Editor fully introduced the doctrines of the Godhead of Jesus and the Holy Ghost, and of the Atonement, as the only foundation of Christianity; whereby he compelled me, as a professed believer of one God, to deny, for the first time publicly, those doctrines; and now he takes occasion to accuse me of presumption in teaching doctrines which he has himself compelled me to avow.

The Editor assigns, as a reason for entering on this controversy, that after a review of the "Precepts of Jesus, and the First Appeal," he "felt some doubt whether their author fully believed the Deity of Christ," and, consequently, he "adduced a few passages from the Scriptures to confirm this doctrine." He then adds, that this Second Appeal to the Christian public confirms all that he before only feared. (Page 1.) I could have scarcely credited this assertion of the Reviewer's unacquaintance with my religious opinions, if the allegation had come from any other quarter; for both in my conversation and correspondence with as many Missionary gentlemen, old and young, as I have had the honour to know, I have never hesitated, when required, to offer my sentiments candidly, as to the unscripturality and unreasonableness of the doctrine of the Trinity. On one occasion particularly, when on a visit to one of the Reverend colleagues of the Editor, at Serampore, long before the time of these publications, I discussed the subject with that gentleman at his invitation; and then fully manifested my disbelief of this doctrine, taking the liberty of examining successively all the arguments he, from friendly motives, urged upon me in support of it. Notwithstanding these circumstances, I am inclined to believe, from my confidence in the character of the Editor, that either those Missionary gentlemen that were acquainted with my religious sentiments have happened to omit the mention of them to him, or he has forgotten what they had communicated on this subject, when he entered on the review of my publications on Christianity.

In page 503, the Editor insinuates that vanity had led me to presume that "freedom from the powerful effects of early religious

impressions" has enabled me to "discover the truths of scripture, in its most important doctrines, more fully in three or four years, than others have done by most unremitting study in thirty or forty." The doctrine of the Trinity appears to me so obviously unscriptural, that I am pretty sure, from my own experience and that of others that no one, possessed of merely common sense, will fail to find its unscripturality after a methodical study of the Old and New Testaments, unless previously impressed in the early part of his life with creeds, and forms of speech preparing the way to that doctrine. No pride, therefore, can be supposed for a moment to have arisen from commonly attainable success. The Editor might be fully convinced of this fact, were he to engage a few independent and diligent natives to study attentively, both the Old and New Testaments in their original languages, and then to offer their sentiments as to the doctrine of the Trinity being scriptural or a mere human invention.

To hold up to ridicule my suggestions in the Second Appeal, to study first the books of the Old Testament, unbiassed by ecclesiastic opinions, imbibed in early life, and then to study the New Testament, the Reverend Editor states, that "could it be relied on indeed," my compendious method "would deserve notice, with a view to Christian education; as," on my plan, "the most certain way of enabling any one to discover, in a superior manner, the truths and doctrines of Christianity, is to leave him till the age of thirty or forty, without any religious impression."—(Page 503) I do not in the least wonder at his disapprobation of my suggestion; as the Editor, in common with other professors of traditional opinions, is sure of supporters of his favourite doctrine, so long as it is inculcated on the minds of youths, and even infants, who, being once thoroughly impressed with the name of the Trinity in Unity, and Unity in Trinity, long before they can think for themselves, must be always inclined, even after their reason has become matured, to interpret the sacred books, even those texts which are evidently inconsistent with this doctrine, in a manner favourable to their prepossessed opinion, whether their study be continued for three, or thirty, or twice thirty years. Could Hindooism continue after the present generation, or bear the studious examination of a single year, if the belief of their idols being endued with animation were not carefully impressed on the young before they come to years of understanding

Let me here suggest, that, in my humble opinion, no truly liberal and wise parent can ever take advantage of the unsuspecting and confiding credulity of his children to impress them with an implicit belief in any set of abstruse doctrines, and intolerance of all other opinions, the truth or reasonableness of which they are incapable of estimating. Still less would he urge by threats the danger of present and eternal punishment, for withholding a blind assent to opinions they are unable to comprehend. Parents are bound, by every moral tie, to give their children such an education as may be sufficient to render them capable of exercising their reason as rational and social beings, and of forming their opinion on religious points, without ill-will towards others, from a thorough investigation of the scriptures, and of the evidence and arguments adduced by teachers of different persuasions. Judgments, thus formed, have a real claim to respect from those who have not the means of judging for themselves. But of what consequence is it, in a question of truth or error, to know how the matter at issue has been considered, even for a hundred generations, by those who have blindly adopted the creed of their fathers? Surely the unbiassed judgment of a person who has proceeded to the study of the Sacred Scriptures, with an anxious desire to discover the truth they contain, even if his researches were to be continued but for a single twelve-month, ought, as far as authority goes in such matters, to outweigh the opinions of any number who have either not thought at all for themselves, or have studied after prejudice have laid hold of their minds. What fair inquiry respecting the doctrine of the Trinity can be expected from one who has been, on the bosom of his mother, constantly taught to ask the blessing of God the Father, God the Son, and God the Holy Ghost, and to hear the very name of Unitarian with horror? Have the doctrines of the Vedanta ever succeeded in suppressing polytheism amongst the generality of Hindoos, brought up with the notion of the Godhead of the sun of fire, and of water, and of the separate and independent existence of the allegorical representations of the attributes of God? Were the sublime works, written by the learned among the Greeks, ever able to shake the early acquired superstitious notions and polytheistical faith of the generality of their countrymen? Nay, even when Christian converts became numerous, did not those who were brought up in the ancient superstition introduce some vestiges of their idolatry into their new persuasion? In fact, nothing

can more surely impede the progress of truth, than prejudice instilled into minds blank to receive impressions; and the more unreasonable are the doctrines of a religion, the greater pains are taken by the supporters of them to plant them in the readily susceptible minds of youth.

The Editor has filled a complete page in proving that, besides early impressed prejudices, there are also other causes of error in judgment—an attempt which might have been dispensed with; for I never limited the sources of mistake in examining religious matters to early impression alone. I attributed only the prevailing errors in Christianity to traditional instructions inculcated in childhood, as the language of my Second Appeal will shew: "Having derived my own opinions on this subject entirely from the Scriptures themselves, I may perhaps be excused for the confidence with which I maintain them against those of so great a majority, who appeal to the same authority for theirs; inasmuch as I attribute their different views, not to any inferiority of judgment compared with my own limited ability, but to the powerful effects of early religious impressions; for when these are deep, reason is seldom allowed its natural scope in examining them to the bottom." (P. 235.) If the Editor doubts the accuracy of this remark, he might soon satisfy himself of its justice, were he to listen to the suggestion offered in the preceding paragraph, with a view to ascertain whether the doctrine of the Trinity rests for its belief on scriptural authorities, or on early religious impressions.

The Editor mentions, ironically, (in page 3,) that my success in scriptural studies was such "as to prove that the most learned and pious in every age of the church have been so completely mistaken as to transform the pure religion of Jesus into the most horrible idolatry." In answer to this, I only beg to ask the Rev. Editor to let me know first what a Protestant in the fifteenth century could have answered, if he had been thus questioned by a Roman Catholic: "Is your success in examining the truths of scripture such as to prove that the most learned and pious in every age of the church have been so completely mistaken as to transform the pure religion of Jesus into the most horrible idolatry, by introducing the worship of Mary the mother of God, and instituting images in churches, as well as by acknowledging the Pope as the head of the church, vested with the power of forgiving sins?" Would not his answer be this, "My success is indeed so

as to prove these doctrines to be unscriptural. As to your inferences, they are no more divine than mine; and though I do not doubt the piety and learning of many Christians of your church in every age, I am persuaded that many corruptions, introduced into the Christian religion by the Roman heathens converted in the fourth and fifth centuries, have been handed down through successive generations by impressions made in the early part of life, and have taken such root in the minds of men, that piety and learning have fallen short of eradicating prejudices nourished by church and state, as well as by the vulgar superstition and enthusiasm." Were this reply justifiable, I also might be allowed to offer the following answer: "I find not the doctrine of the Trinity in the scriptures; I cannot receive any human creed for divine truth; but, without charging the supporters of this doctrine with impiety or fraud, humbly attribute their misinterpretation of the Scriptures to 'early religious impressions.'"

The Editor assigns as a reason for his omission of several arguments, adduced in the Second Appeal, that "we have before us a work of a hundred and seventy-three pages, to an examination of which we can scarcely devote half that number: and while to leave a single page unnoticed, might by some be deemed equivalent to leaving it unanswered, the mere transcription of the passages to be answered, were it done in every instance, would occupy nearly all the room we can give the reply itself. We shall therefore adduce such evidence for these doctrines, as, if sound, will render every thing urged against them nugatory, though not particularly noticed." To enable the public to compare the extent of the Second Appeal with that of the Review, I beg to observe, that the former contains 173 widely printed and the latter 128 closely printed pages, and that if any one will take the trouble of comparing the number of words per page in the two Essays, he will soon satisfy himself that the one is as long as the other. I will afterwards notice, in the course of the present reply, whether or not "the evidence of these doctrines," adduced by the Editor in the Review, has still left a great many arguments in the Appeal quite unanswered.

In his attempt to prove the insufficiency of the Precepts of Jesus to procure men peace and happiness, the Rev. Editor advanced the following position, "that the most excellent precepts, the most perfect law, can never lead to happiness and peace, unless by causing men to take refuge in the doctrine of the cross," (No. 1, Quarterly Series of

the Friend of India, page 111,) without adducing any arguments having reference to the position. I therefore brought to his recollection (in my First and Second Appeals) such authorities of the gracious author of Christianity, as I conceived established the sufficiency of these precepts for leading to comfort, and solicited the Editor "to point out, in order to establish his position, even a single passage pronounced by Jesus, enjoining refuge in the doctrine of the cross, as all-sufficient or indispensable for salvation." (P. 118 of the Second Appeal.) The Editor instead of endeavouring to demonstrate the truth of his assertion as to the insufficiency of the precepts to conduct men to happiness, or shewing a single passage of the nature applied for, introduces a great number of other passages of Scripture which he thinks well calculated to prove that the death of Jesus was an atonement for the sins of mankind. I regret that the Editor should have adopted such an irregular mode of arguing in solemn religious discussion; and I still more regret to find that some readers should overlook the want of connection between the position advanced and the authorities adduced by the Editor. Were we both to adopt such a mode of controversy as to cite passages apparently favourable to our respective opinions without adhering to the main ground, the number of his Reviews, and of my Appeals, would increase at least in proportion to the number of the years of our lives; for verses and quotations of scripture, if unconnected with their context, and interpreted without regard to the idiom of the languages in which they were written, may, as experience has shewn, be adduced to support any doctrine whatever; and the Editor may always find a majority of readers of the same religious sentiments with himself, satisfied with any thing that he may offer, either in behalf of the Trinity, or in support of the Atonement.

Whether Jesus died actually as a sacrifice for the sins of men, or merely in the fulfilment of the duties of his office as the Messiah, as it was predicted, is merely a matter of opinion the truth of which can only be ascertained from a diligent examination of the terms used and doctrines set forth in the evangelical writings. This however has no relation to a proof or disproof of the sufficiency of his precepts for salvation. In order to come to a conclusion, as to the value of the Precepts of Jesus being either really effectual or merely nominal, I deem it necessary to repeat a few passages already quoted in my Appeals, to ask the Editor, whether they demand explicit

belief or are unworthy of credit; and in case he admit the former alternative, I should beg to ask him, whether they confirm the opinion that the precepts preached by Jesus are sufficient to lead men to eternal peace and happiness, or are a set of sentences delivered by him conformably to the principles of his hearers, similar to other codes of moral law written by the ancient philosophers of Greece, Egypt, and India? The passages in question are as follow:

Mark, xii, 29: "Jesus answered him, The first of all the commandments is, Hear O Israel, the Lord our God is one Lord. Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, with all thy soul, and with all thy mind, and with all thy strength: this is the first commandment. And the second is like unto it, namely, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself. There is none other commandment greater than these." Is there another commandment absolutely enjoining refuge in the doctrine of the cross, so as to shew that these two commandments are insufficient for salvation, and comparatively insignificant?

Matthew, vii. 24: "Therefore, whosoever heareth these sayings of mine," (alluding to the precepts contained in chs. v. vi. and vii.) "and doeth them, I will liken him unto a wise man who built his house upon a rock," &c. Are not these sayings declared by Jesus to afford a stable foundation, on which may be raised the indestructible edifice of eternal life? John, xv. 10: "If ye keep my commandments ye shall abide in my love." Ver. 14: "Ye are my friends if ye do whatsoever I command you." I therefore again ask the Rev. Editor to shew a commandment of Jesus directing refuge in the doctrine of the cross, in the same explicit way as he has enjoined love to God and to neighbours and obedience to his precepts as sufficient means for attaining eternal happiness. Did not Jesus in Matthew. xxv. 31, et seq. by means of a parable in the description of the day of judgment, declare that acts of charity and beneficence toward fellow-creatures will be accepted as the manifestation of love towards God and be the sufficient cause of eternal life?

With a view to depreciate the weight of the following explicit promise of Jesus, "Do this and thou shalt live," the Editor interprets, (p. 509,) that "Jesus taking him (the lawyer) "on his own principles, as though he had been, what he vainly imagined himself, a sinless man who needed no saviour, directed him to the whole of the divine law, adding, 'This do, and thou shalt live,' though he knew

that it was utterly impossible for that lawyer to observe his instructions." The Editor, however, quite forgot that by his attempt to undervalue the precepts of Jesus, he was actually degrading the dignity of the author of them; for according to his interpretation, it appears, that as the lawyer tempted Jesus by putting to him a question which he thought the Saviour could not answer, so Jesus, in return, tempted him, by directing him to do what he knew to be impossible for man to perform, though this very teacher forbids others to shew revenge even to enemies. Did Jesus take also the Scribe "upon his own principles," by instructing in these two commandments?*—a man who was never inclined to tempt Jesus, but having heard him reasoning, "and perceiving that he had answered well, asked him, Which is the first commandment of all?† and when he heard the reply of Jesus, he said, "Well, Master thou hast said the truth,"—a man whom Jesus declared to be at least out of danger of hell for his acknowledgment of the truth of his precepts as the means of salvation, telling him, "*Thou art not far from the kingdom of heaven?*" Did Jesus on the Mount take also his disciples "upon their own principle," as though they had been, what they vainly imagined themselves, sinless men who needed no Saviour, in directing them to his precepts, the observance of which he knew utterly impossible, and in holding out promises‡ of eternal salvation as the necessary consequence of their obedience to those sayings?—Were we to follow the mode of interpretation adopted in this instance by the Editor, the Bible would serve only to suit our convenience, and would not be esteemed any longer as a guide to mankind; for according to the same mode of interpretation, would it not be justifiable to explain Matthew, xxviii. 19, "Go ye therefore and teach all nations baptizing them," &c. that Jesus took his apostles "upon their own principle," as firmly persuaded to believe in the sanctification attainable by the baptism introduced by John the Baptist, although he was aware that immersion in water could produce no effect in changing the state of the heart!

In reply to his question, "Did Jesus, who knew the hearts of all, regard this lawyer as perfectly sinless, an exception to all mankind?" (Page 9) I must say that the context seems to me to shew that neither Jesus considered the lawyer to be a sinless, perfect man, (as is evident from his directing him to the scriptures for a guide to

* Mark, xii. 29. † Mark, xii. 28—34. ‡ Matthew, vii. 24, 25.

salvation,) "Do this and thou shalt live," and "Go and do thou likewise:" nor did the lawyer vainly imagine himself "a sinless man who needed no Saviour," though he endeavoured to put the claim of Jesus to that title, to the proof, in these words, "Master, what shall I do to inherit eternal life"?

Although I declared (in the Second Appeal, page 116) that by the term "law" in the verse "If righteousness come by the law, Christ is dead in vain," all the commandments found in the books of Moses are understood, yet the Rev. Editor charges me with an unintelligible expression, and intimates his inability to ascertain whether I meant by "law" the ceremonial or the moral part of the books of Moses. (Page 507,) I therefore beg to explain the verse more fully, that the Rev. Editor may have an opportunity of commenting upon it at large. St. Paul, knowing the efficacy of the perfection introduced by Jesus into the law given by Moses, declares, that had the system of the Mosaical law been sufficient to produce light among the Jews and Gentiles without being perfected by Jesus, this attempt made by Christ to perfect it would have been superfluous, and his death, which was the consequence of his candid instructions, would have been to no purpose.

The Editor notices frequently my expression of the neglect of duty on the part of man to the Creator and to his fellow-creatures, nevertheless, he fills up more than two pages in proving this point. He has not, however, attempted to counteract the force of the passages I quoted in both of my Appeals, shewing that the guilt occasioned by the want of due obedience to the precepts in question may be pardoned through repentance prescribed by the author of those precepts as the sure and only remedy for human failure. I therefore beg to ask the Editor to give a plain explanation of the following passages selected from my Appeals, that the reader may be able to judge whether or not repentance can procure us the blessings of pardon for our constant omissions in the discharge of the duties laid down in the precepts of Jesus. Luke, v., 32: of "I came not to call the righteous, but sinners to repentance." Does not Jesus here declare a chief object of his mission to be the calling of sinners to repentance? Luke, xxiv. 47: "That repentance and remission of sins should be preached, in his name, among all nations." Did not Jesus, by this commandment to his disciples, declare the remission of sins as an immediate and necessary consequence of repentance? In Luke, xiii. 3, "Except ye

repent, ye shall all likewise perish," the indispensability of repentance for the forgiveness of sins is explicitly declared. Is not also the mercy of God illustrated by the example of a father forgiving the transgressions of his son through his sincere repentance alone, in the parable of the prodigal son? Those who place confidence in the divine mission of Jesus, or even in his veracity, will not hesitate, I trust, for a moment, to admit that Jesus has directed us to sincere repentance as the only means of procuring pardon, knowing the inability of men to give entire obedience to his precepts; and that Jesus would have recommended the lawyer, whom he directed to righteousness, to have recourse to repentance "had he gone and sincerely attempted" to obey his precepts "watching his own heart to discern those constant neglects of the duty he owed to the Creator and to his fellow-creatures," and then applied to Jesus for the remedy of his discerned imperfections.

I find abundant passages in the Old Testament also, representing other sources than sacrifice, as sufficient means of procuring pardon for sin. Psalm, li. 17. "The sacrifices of God are a broken spirit; a broken and contrite heart, O God, thou wilt not despise." Ezekiel, xviii. 30: "Repent and turn yourselves from all your transgressions; so iniquity shall not be your ruin." Proverbs, xvi. 6: "By mercy and truth iniquity is purged, and by the fear of the Lord men depart from evil." Isaiah, i. 18: "Come now and let us reason together, saith the Lord. Though your sins be as scarlet, they shall be as white as snow; though they be red like crimson, they shall be as wool."

To shew the inefficacy of repentance to procure pardon, the Editor appeals to human justice, which, as he says, "inquires not about the repentance of the robber and murderer, but respecting his guilt. The law, indeed, knows no repentance."—(page 506.) I therefore wish to know whether or not human justice suffers an innocent man to be killed, to atone for the guilt of theft or murder commited by another? It is at all events, more consistent with justice, that a judge who has the privilege of shewing mercy, should forgive the crimes of those that truly feel the pain and distress of mind inseparable from sincere repentance, than that he should put an innocent man to death, or destroy his own life, to atone for the guilt of some of his condemend culprits.

CHAPTER II.

Inquiry into the Doctrine of the Atonement.

In his first Review, the Editor began with what he considered "the most abstruse, and yet the most important of Christian doctrines, the Deity of Jesus Christ." and then proceeded to substantiate the doctrine of his atonement. I therefore followed this course of arrangement in my Second Appeal; but as the Editor has introduced the doctrine of the atonement of Jesus first in the present Review, I will also arrange my reply accordingly.

The Editor quotes first, Genesis, iii., 15:—"I will put enmity between thee and the woman, and between thy seed and her seed; it shall bruise thy head, and thou shalt bruise his heel." From this passage he attempts to deduce the atonement of Jesus for the sins of men, demanding, "What could a reptile feel, relative to the fate of its offspring, through future ages? of what individual serpents did the seed of the woman break the head, so as for it to bruise his heel?" "Jesus, then," he affirms, "is the seed of the woman who suffered from the malice af Satan, while he, on the cross, destroyed his power by atoning for sin and reconciling man to God."—(Page 517.) I admit that a reptile, as far as human experience goes, is incapable of feeling "relative to the fate of its offspring through future ages;" but I wish to know if a mere reptile could have the power of conversation, so as to persuade a woman to adhere to its advice; whether the ass of Balaam could be possessed of the power of seeing exclusively the angel of God, and conversing with its own master Balaam? and whether ravens could diligently supply the wants of Elijah, by bringing him bread and flesh morning and evening? Are not these occurrences equally difficult to reconcile to "common sense' as the case of the serpent is, according tc the Editor? Yet we find these stated in the sacred books and we are taught to believe them as they stand. Can we justly attempt to represent the ass, and those ravens also, as either angelical or demoniacal spirits, in the same way as the reptile is represented by the Editor to have been no other than Satan? We might, in that case, be permitted to give still greater latitude to metaphor, so as to take all the facts

it referrd to Christ as well as to Israel; but the difference is manifest: Israel was God's adopted son, constantly rebelling against his father: Jesus was God's proper son of the same nature with his father (as is every proper son) and did always what pleased him." This assertion of the Editor (that 'Israel was God's adopted son') is I think without foundation; for they are declared, like Jesus, to be begotten sons of God; but mere not like Christ entirely devoted to the will of the Father of the universe. Deu. xxxii. 18; "Of the Rock that *begat* thee thou art unmindful, and hast forgotten God that formed thee." Exodus iv. 22: "And thou shalt say unto Pharaoh, thus saith the Lord, Israel is my son, even *my first born*." He then quotes Hosea iii. 5: "Afterwards shall the children of Israel return and seek the Lord their God and David their king:" on which he comments that David had then been in his grave—he could be sought only in heaven;—as David in common with other saints, could not search the heart and know the sincerity of prayers, this prophecy must be assigned to the son of David, the Messiah. I really regret to observe that as the Jews endeavour to misinterpret such passages as are most favourable to the idea of Jesus being the expected Messiah, so Christians in general try to refer to Jesus any passages that can possibly be explained as bearing the least allusion to their notion of the Messiah, however distant in fact they may be from such a notion. By so doing they both only weaken their respective opinions. The above citation on which the Editor now dwells is an instance. Let us refer to the text of Hosea iii. 4: "For the children of Israel shall abide many days without a king, an image, and without an ephod, and without teraphim. Ver. 5: Afterwards shall the children of Israel return and seek the Lord their God and David their king; and shall fear the Lord and his goodness in the latter days." Does not the poetical language of the prophet determine to the satisfaction of every unbiased man that, after long sufferings Israel will repent of their disobedience and seek the protection of their God and the happiness which their fathers enjoyed during the reign of David, as it is very natural for a nation or tribe when opposed by foreign conquerors to remember their own ancient kings under whose Governments their fathers were prosperous, and to wish a return of their reign if possible? If the Editor insist upon referring this prophecy to Jesus, he must wait its fulfilment; as Israel has not as yet sought Jesus as the son of David, the Messiah, who was promised to them.

salvation through his divine precepts. I know not how to answer the question of the Editor, "of what individual serpent did the seed of the woman break the head, so as for it to bruise his heel?" unless by referring him to the reciprocal injuries, which man and serpent inflict on each other.

The Editor refers to the circumstance of the sacrifice offered by Abel, and approved of God in preference to his brother Cain's (Gen., iv. 4,) esteeming it as an illustration of the vicarious sacrifice of Jesus for the remission of sin.—(Page 518.) But I am unable to find out what relation there could exist between the acceptance of the offering of Abel by Jehovah, and the death of Jesus, whether sacrificial or not. The Editor, however, founds his assertion, that Abel having looked forward to the atonement of Jesus, his offerings were accepted by God; upon the circumstance of Abraham's seeing the day of Christ by prophetic anticipation (John, viii. 56); and Moses having esteemed the reproach of Christ greater riches than the treasures in Egypt, (Heb., xi. 26,*) they all having been "of the same catalogue." I, therefore, should hope to be informed whether there be any authority justifying this reference. On the contrary, we find verse fourth of the same chapter of Genesis points out, that Abel having been accustomed to do well, in obedience to the will of God, contrary to the practice of his brother, righteous Jehovah accepted his offering, and rejected that of Cain; to which Paul thus alludes,—"By faith Abel offered a more excellent sacrifice than Cain," (Hebrew, xi. 4,) without leaving us doubtful as to the sense in which that apostle used the word "faith" in the above verse.

"By faith Abel offered unto God," &c. "By faith Enoch was translated that he should not see death," &c. "But without faith it is impossible to please him; for he that *cometh to God* must believe that *he is*, and that he is a *rewarder of them* who diligently seek him." Here St. Paul gives us to understand that the "faith" which procured for Abel, Enoch, Noah, and all the other patriarchs, the grace of God,

* (Improved Version of the New Testament,) Gr. "the reproach of Christ," or "of the anointed." The Israelites are called Christs, or anointed, i. e., a chosen and favoured people, Psalm, cv. 15, Heb., iii. 13. "The meaning is," says Dr. Sykes in loc. "that Moses looked upon the contempt and indignity which he underwent on account of his professing himself a Jew, as much preferable to all the riches and honours of Egypt." See also Whitby, in loc. Dr. Newcome's Version is, "such reproach as Christ endured which is also the interpretation of Photius, Crellius, and Mr. Lindsey, Sequeal, page, 278.

was their belief in the *existence* of God, and in his being their *rewarder*, and in any sacrifice, personal or vicarious. What could prophetic anticipation by Abraham, of the divine commission of Jesus have to do with Abel's conduct, in rendering his sacrifices acceptable to God, that any one can esteem the one as the necessary consequence of the other? Moses having called himself a Jew, gave preference to the term "anointed," or "Israelite," a term of reproach among the Egyptians in those days, over all the riches and honour of Egypt, which he might have obtained by declaring himself an Egyptian instead of a Jew; or Moses esteemed (according to the English version) in his prophetic power, the reproach to which Christ would be made liable by the Jews in the fulfilment of his divine commission, greater riches than all the grandeur of Egyptain unbelievers.—But neither explanation can support the idea that Abel, or any other patriarch, had in view the sacrificial death of Jesus in rendering their offering acceptable to God.

It is true, as the Editor observes, that sacrifices are divine institutions as a manifestation of obedience to God, through the oblation of anything that may be dear to man, whether common, as an animal, or dearly valuable, as one's own son. But they are not represented in any of the sacred books as means having intrinsically the power of procuring men pardon and eternal salvation. They seem, in fact, intended for men unaccustomed to the worship of God in truth and spirit. The following passages suffice to illustrate this beyond doubt. Micah, vi. 7, 8:—"Will the Lord be pleased with thousands of rams, or with ten thousands of rivers of oil? Shall I give my first-born for my transgression,—the fruit of my body for the sin of my soul? He hath shewed thee, O man, what is good, and what doth the Lord *require* of thee *but to do justly*, and *to love mercy*, and *to walk humbly* with thy God?" Here Jehovah, while shewing his displeasure at mere animal sacrifices, enjoins just actions and humility in lieu of them, as worthy to be accepted by God, without substituting human sacrifices in their stead. Hosea, vi. 6: "For I desired mercy *and not sacrifice*, and the knowledge of God more than burnt-offerings." Isaiah, i. 11, 16—18: "To what purpose is the multitude of your sacrifices unto me? saith the Lord I am full of the burnt-offerings of rams, and the fat of fed beasts; and I delight not in the blood of bullocks, or of lambs, or of he-goats.—Wash you, make you clean; put away the evil of your doings from before mine eyes; cease to

do evil; learn to do well; seek judgment; relieve the oppressed; judge the fatherless; plead for the widow. Come now, and let us reason together, saith the Lord; though your sins be as scarlet, they shall be as *white as snow*," &c.—Does not Jehovah here substitute good works alone for sacrifices, as real means of taking away sins? Psalm, l. 8—15: "I will not reprove thee for thy sacrifices or thy burnt-offerings to have been continually before me. I will take no bullock out of thy house, nor he-goats out of thy folds. For every beast of the forest is mine, and the cattle upon a thousand hills. I know all the fowls of the mountains; and the wild beasts of the field are mine. If I were hungry I would not tell thee: for the world is mine, and the fulness thereof. Will I eat the flesh of bulls, or drink the blood of goats? Offer unto God thanksgiving; and pay thy vows unto the Most High; and call upon me in the day of trouble; I will deliver thee, and thou shalt glorify me." Jehovah, who protests against the idea of flesh of bulls being supposed his food, and the blood of goats his drink, cannot be supposed to have had delight in human blood, the blood of his beloved Son. I Samuel, xv. 22: "And Samuel said, Hath the Lord as great delight in burnt-offerings and sacrifices as in obeying the voice of the Lord? Behold, to obey is better than sacrifice, and to hearken than the fat of rams." Proverbs, xxi. 3: "To do justice and judgment is more acceptable to the Lord than sacrifice." Eccles., v. 1: "Keep thy foot when thou goest to the house of God, and be more ready to hear than to give the *sacrifice of fools*; for they consider not they *do evil*."

It is now left for us to ascertain in what sense we should take such phrases as "This man after he had offered one sacrifice for sins:" "Christ hath once appeared to put away sin by the sacrifice of himself;" "Jesus also, that he might sanctify the people with his own blood, suffered without the gate;" "I am the living bread;" "If any man eat of this," &c. Whether do these passages imply that Jesus, though he preferred mercy to sacrifice, (Matthew, ix. 13., xii. 7.) did actually sacrifice himself, and offer his own blood to God as an atonement for the sins of others, or do they mean that Jesus, knowing already that the fulfilment of his divine commission would endanger his life, never hesitated to execute it, and suffered his blood to be shed in saving men from sin through his divine precepts and pure example, which were both opposed to the religious system adopted by his contemporary Jews? Were we to follow the former

mode of interpretation, and take all these phrases in their strictly literal sense, we must be persuaded to believe that God, not being contented with the blood of bulls and goats and other animal sacrifices offered to him by the Israelites, insisted upon the offer of the blood and life of his son, as the condition of his forgiving the sins of men; and that Jesus accordingly offered his blood to propitiate God, and also proposed to men actually to eat his flesh! Would not the doctrines of Christianity, in this case, representing God as delighted with human victims, and directing men to cannibalism, appear monstrous to every civilised being? No one, unless biassed by prejudices, can justify such inconsistency as to interpret literally some of the above-mentioned phrases in support of the doctrine of the atonement, and explain the last quoted figuratively, as they are all confessedly alike subversive of every rational idea of the nature of the divine justice and mercy.

To avoid such a stigma upon the pure religion of Jesus, it is incumbent, I think, upon us to follow the latter mode of interpretation, and to understand from the passages referred to, that Jesus, the spiritual Lord and King of Jews and Gentiles, in fulfilment of the duties of his mission, exposed his own life for the benefit of his subjects, purged their sins by his doctrines, and persevered in executing the commands of God, even to the undergoing of bodily suffering in the miserable death of the cross—a self-devotion or sacrifice, of which no Jewish high priest had offered an example.

Ought not this belief in the unbounded beneficence of Jesus to excite superior gratitude, love, and reverence towards our Saviour and King, than the idea that he, as God, above mortal afflictions, borrowed human nature for a season, and offered this fictitious man as a sacrifice for the remission of sin, while he himself was no more afflicted with that sacrificial death than with the sufferings of other human individuals? If there be, in this latter case, any gratitude felt for the afflictions which attached to the death of the cross, it should be manifested to that temporary man Jesus, and not to Jesus the Christ, whom the Editor and other Trinitarians esteem as God above pain and death.

If it be urged, that it is inconsistent with common justice to pardon sin that requires the capital punishment of death without an atonement for it, it may be replied, that the perfection of divine justice, as well as other attributes of God, should not be measured by

what are found in, and adopted by, the human race. Is it consistent with our common notions of justice to visit the sins of fathers on their descendants, as God ascribed to himself, (Exodus xx. 5)? Is it consistent with our common notions of justice to afflict men with infinite punishment for their finite guilt, as Jesus declares in Matthew, xviii. 8? Even in the present case, would it be consistent with common notions of justice to afflict an innocent man with the death of the cross, for sins committed by others, even supposing the innocent man should voluntarily offer his life in behalf of those others? We can have no idea of the perfection of divine justice, mercy, and wrath, unless from what is revealed to us; and as we find, in the sacred books, that sins have been pardoned in consequence of the intercession of righteous men, without any sacrificial atonement, we should, therefore, be contented with those authorities, and should not entertain doubt as to pardon being bestowed upon those who have had the advantage of the intercession of Jesus, exalted as he was by God over all prophets and righteous men that ever lived.

Numb. xiv. 19, 20: "Moses prayed to the Lord, Pardon, I beseech thee, the iniquity of this people according unto the greatness of thy mercy, and as thou hast forgiven this people from Egypt even until now; and the Lord said, I have pardoned, *according to thy word.*" 2 Chron., xxx. 18—20: "For a multitude of the people, even many of Ephraim and Mannasseh, Issachar and Zebulon, had not cleansed themselves, yet did they eat the passover otherwise than it was written. But Hezekiah prayed for them, saying, "The good Lord pardon every one that prepareth his heart to seek God, the Lord God of his fathers, though he be not cleansed according to the purification of the sanctuary. And the Lord hearkened to Hezekiah, and healed the people." Psalm, cvi. 23: "Therefore he said that he would destroy them, had not Moses, his chosen, stood before him in the breach to turn away his wrath, lest he should destroy them." Did not Jehovah here forgive the sins of Israel from the intercession of Moses, without having the least reference to the offer of animal or human blood? Psalm, xxxii. 5: "I acknowledge my sin unto thee, and mine iniquity have I not hid; I said, I will confess my transgressions unto the Lord, and thou *fargavest* the iniquity of my sin." Were not sins forgiven in this instance also, through confession and humility without blood-offerings? Psalm, cxli. 2: "Let *my prayer be set forth* before thee as incense; and the *lifting up of my hands* as

the evening sacrifice." Isaiah, lv. 7: "Let the wicked forsake his way and the unrighteous man his thoughts; and let him return unto the Lord, and he will have mercy upon him; and to our God, for he will abundantly pardon." Jer., vii. 21—23: "Thus saith the Lord of hosts, the God of Israel. Put your *burnt offerings unto your sacrifices, and eat flesh.* For I spake unto your fathers, nor commanded them in the day that I brought them out of the land of Egypt, concerning *burnt-offerings* or sacrifices. But this thing commanded I them, saying, *Obey my voice*, and I will be your God, and ye shall be my people," &c. Here we find prayers and obedience preferred to animal sacrifices as means of pardon, and no reference, direct or figurative, to propitiation, to be made by human blood. Such an attempt, therefore, as to represent human blood, or that of God in human form, in lieu of animal blood, as an indispensable atonement for sins, is, I think, unscriptural.

The Editor quotes (page 519.) Heb., x. "It is not possible that the blood of bulls and goats should take away sins; sacrifice and offering thou wouldst not, but a body hast thou prepared me; in burnt-offerings and sacrifices thou hast had no pleasure." And he attempts thereby to prove that 'sacrifices, considered in themselves, then, were never desired by God: they are approved merely with a view to his making atonement for whom God had prepared a body,' and that "they ceased after he had offered himself a sacrifice for sin. How strange is the idea, that "God who preserves man and beast, nor suffers a sparrow to fall to the ground without his permission;" and by whom sacrifices "were never desired for their own sake," should have caused millions of animals to be slaughtered at different times by men under the mistaken notion of their being an atonement for sins, while he has been remitting iniquity from eternity, referring only to the real and sufficient atonement made by Jesus for the sins of all men that ever lived from the beginning of the world?

How inconsistent is such an idea with the known mercy of that Providence, whose unwillingness to receive human sacrifices was such, that when Abraham had proved his fidelity by binding his son on the altar, God stayed his hand from the sacrifice, and produced a ram unexpectedly before him, which he was graciously pleased to accept as an offering in *the stead of Isaac* (Genesis, xxii. 13.) How can we imagine that God should have received the offering which he himself had thus prepared, with reference solely to the future sacrifice of a

being far superior in excellence to Isaac, whose life he mercifully preserved?

As to the above-cited verses, they rather corroborate the second mode of interpretation, noticed in the preceding paragraphs, that the doctrine of a real human sacrifice in the Christian dispensation for in verses fifth and sixth, the author of the Epistle to the Hebrews declares the dissatisfaction of God with sacrifices and offerings, in general terms, without limiting them to any particular species, whether of man or of animal. The language of the fifth verse, "Sacrifice and offering thou wouldest not, but a body hast thou prepared me," confirms the idea that the divine disregard of mere sacrifice led to the preparation of a body for Jesus, through which he could impart to mankind the perfection of the will and laws of God, in a manner consistent with the divine nature, teaching them to yield to God a heart-felt, instead of a ceremonial and outward obedience, and thereby putting an end to the further effusion of blood, as a testimony of humility, gratitude and devotion.

Hence it appears more consistent with the context and the general tenor of scripture, to understand by the phrase, "The offering of the body of Jesus Christ," (quoted often by the Editor,) the death of Jesus as a spiritual and virtual sacrifice for the sins of all those for whom he became mediator; inasmuch as by that death the blessed Saviour testified his perfect obedience and devotion to the will of his heavenly Father, and thereby vindicated to himself the renewed favour of God. During his life he instructed mankind how they might render themselves worthy of the Divine mercy: by his death he qualified himself to be their intercessor at the heavenly throne, when sincere repentance was to be offered by them instead of perfect duty. We may easily account for the adoption by the apostles, with respect to him, of such terms as sacrifice and atonement for sin, and their representing Jesus as the high priest, engaged to take away the sins of the world by means of his blood. These were modes of speech made use of in allusion to the sacrifices and blood-offerings which the Jews and their high priest used to make for the remission of sins; and the apostles wisely accommodated their instructions to the ideas and forms of language familiar to those whom they addressed.

How inconsistent would it be, in the author of the Epistle to the Hebrews, to declare in one place, that God would not have sacrifice

and offering; and again to announce, almost at the same moment, that he was so pleased with sacrifice, even with a human sacrifice, that for its sake he would forgive the sins of the world. Besides, in the Christian dispensation, sacrifice implies a spiritual offering required by God, not only from the author of this religion, but also from his disciples and followers; a fact which may be illustrated by sacred authority, 1 Peter, ii. 4, 5: "To whom coming, as unto a *living stone*, disallowed indeed of men, but *chosen of God and precious*, ye also, as *lively stones*, are built up *spiritual sacrifices* acceptable to God by Jesus Christ."

I am not at all disposed to dispute the assertion of the Editor, (p. 532,) that "a priest without atonement, however, had no existence in the Old Testament;" but I must say that a priest without atonement has existence in the New Testament, and refer the Editor to the following verses, excluding those that are applied to Jesus. Rev., i. 6: "And hath made us kings and priests unto God;" xx. 6: "But they shall be priests of God and of Christ, and shall reign with him a thousand years;" 1 Peter, ii. 5: "Ye also, as lively stones, are built up a spiritual house, and holy priesthood." Moreover, in explaining such phrases as "I am the living bread,"—"If any man eat of this bread, he shall live for ever,"—"The bread that I will give is my flesh,"—"Except ye eat the flesh of the Son of man,"—and, "Unless ye eat his flesh, and drink his blood, ye have no life in you,"—"My flesh is meat indeed, and my blood is drink indeed;" Protestant commentators take upon themselves to interpret, that these phrases are in allusion to the manner of sacrifice, and that the eating of the flesh of Jesus, and drinking his blood, must be understood in a spiritual, not in a carnal sense. If these writers make so direct an encroachment upon the literal sense of those phrases, in order to avoid the idea of cannibalism being a tenet of Christianity, why should I not be justified upon the same principles, and on the authority of the apostle, in understanding by sacrifice, in the language of the apostle, a virtual oblation—that Christianity may not be represented as a religion founded upon the horrible system of human victims?

The Editor first refers (page 520) to "Noah's sacrifice on his coming out of the ark:" whence he concludes that all the genuine religion of the new world was founded on the future atonement made by Christ. He again mentions God having made a promise to Abraham, that in

him "shall all the families of the earth be blessed"—a blessing which came to the Gentiles through Jesus. He considers this circumstance of the communication of blessing as fully foretelling the atonement of Jesus. The Editor has also quoted the passage in Job "I know that my redeemer liveth, and that he shall stand in the latter day upon the earth;" being of opinion that the term redeemer being applied to Christ proves either his atonement or his deity. I must confess my inability to find out the connection between these authorities and the conclusion drawn by the Editor from them. Did God, who, according to the Rev. Editor, had no delight even in animal sacrifice, anticipate great delight in human sacrifice when Noah made an offering to him?

May we not admit, that the divine promise to Abraham has been fulfilled in the blessings we enjoy, derived from the sacred instructions of Jesus, without assuming that other advantages have been reaped by us from the circumstance of his having shed his blood for us, exclusively considered? If not, how can Jesus assure us of the divine blessing merely through the observance of his instructions? Matthew, v. 3—11. Luke, xi. 28. "But said he (Jesus) yea, rather blessed are they that hear the word of God and keep it."

Could not Job or any one call another his redeemer or deliverer without having allusion to his blood? Cannot one being redeem another without sacrificing his own blood? How is it, then, we find Jehovah, the Father of all, called redeemer, though in that capacity not considered even by Trinitarians to have had his blood shed as an atonement? Isaiah, lxiii, 16: "Thou, O Lord, art our father, our redeemer." lx. 16: "Shalt know that I Jehovah am thy saviour and thy redeemer."

I wonder at the assertion of the Editor, that "the Messiah is not termed a redeemer merely on account of his teaching or his example." "These" he says, "could be of no value to Job, who lived so long before the appearance of Christ in the earth." I wish to know whether Job, an inspired writer, is to be considered as possessed of a knowledge of future events or not? as, in the former case, the circumstances of Christ's atoning for sin, according to the Editor, and the nature and import of his divine instructions, were equally known to him, and he could call the Messiah redeemer in either view. In the latter case, (i. e. if he was unacquainted with future events while writing this passage) then the doctrine of the atonement, and the saving truths inculcated by Christ, were, of course, equally hidden from him, and

neither, consequently, could be of any value to Job, "who lived so long before Christ's appearance in the earth" The fact is, the verse of Job quoted by the Editor has no such obvious reference to the Messiah that any one can be justified in applying to Jesus the term "Redeemer," found in the same verse. I therefore quote it with its context that my readers may have a better opportunity of considering the subject in question. Job, xix. 24—26:—"That they (my words) were graven with an iron pen and lead in the rock for ever! For I know that my Redeemer liveth, and that he shall stand at the latter day* upon the earth. And though after my *skin worms destroy* this body, yet in my flesh shall *I see God.*"

The Editor having urged in his first review, (page 101,) that the circumstance of the term "lamb" being twice applied to Jesus by John the Baptist, shewed that Jesus came into the world to sacrifice his life as an atonement for sin, I observed to the Editor in my Second Appeal (page 162) that such terms as "lamb" and "sheep" were applied in scripture to the disciples of Jesus also; many of whom likewise suffered death in their attempt to withdraw men from sin, yet in their cases no allusion to the sacrificial lamb has ever been made; and that it might be therefore safely inferred that the epithets "lamb" and "sheep" are merely figurative terms for innocence subjected to persecution. The Editor however without noticing this observation, quotes in his present review (page 522) some verses of the apostles of Peter and John, in which the apostles use the same epithet "lamb" applied to their gracious master. It is obvious from what I stated in my Second Appeal, that I did not dispute the application of that term to Jesus in the scriptural books. I only maintained that no Christian, whether primitive or modern, could ever apply the word "lamb" in its literal sense to Jesus; who, as being above the angels of God, is of course far above the nature of a "lamb," and that under this consideration it must have been used for innocence subjected to persecution, as we find the use of the word "lamb" very frequent elsewhere when applied to man. John, xxi. 15: (already quoted in the Second Appeal) "feed my lambs." Luke, x. 3: "Behold I send you forth as lambs among wolves." Genesis, xxii. 7, 8: "And he (Isaac) said, Behold the fire and the wood; but where is the lamb for a burnt-offering? and Abraham said, My son, God will provide himself a lamb for a burnt-offering?"

* אחרון signifies properly *afterwards* without any reference to a particular day.

Wherein Abraham doubtless meant his innocent son about to be subjected to a violent death; hiding the commandment of God from him, as appears from the following verses;—"And they came to the place which God had told him of; and Abraham built an altar there, and laid the wood in order and bound Isaac his son and laid him on the altar upon the wood: and Abraham stretched forth his hand and took the knife to slay his son." Jeremiah, xi. 19: "But I was like a lamb or an ox that is brought to slaughter."

Upon the same principle the apostles generally used "blood" for condescension to death; and "sacrifice" for a virtual one; as I noticed fully in the preceding paragraphs.

The Editor relates, (page 524) that the priest used to lay his hands on the head of a living goat, "and confess over him all the iniquities of the children of Israel, putting them on the head of the goat, and by the hand of a fit person to send it away into the wilderness as *an atonement* for *all their sins* in every year." He then infers, from this circumstance, that "commandments like these did more than merely foretell the atonement of Christ." Were we to consider at all the annual scape-goat as an indication of some other atonement for sin, we must esteem it as a sign of Aaron's bearing the iniquities of Israel both the scape-goat and Aaron having alike borne the sins of others without sacrificing their lives; but by no means can it be supposed a sign of the atonement of Christ, who, according to the author, bore the sins of men by the sacrifice of his own life. and had therefore no resemblance to the scape-goat or Aaron. Exodus, xxviii. 38:—"And it shall be upon Aaron's forehead that Aaron may bear the iniquity of the holy things which the children of Israel shall hallow in all their holy gifts; and it shall be always upon his forehead, that they may be accepted before the Lord." I wonder that the Rev. Editor himself notices here that the iniquities of Israel were forgiven by confession over the scape-goat, without animal or human victims and yet represents the circumstance of the *scape-goat*, as a prediction of the sacrificial *death* of Christ, and insists upon the forgiveness of sins being founded upon the effusion of blood.

The Rev. Editor now begins with Psalm, ii. 1, (p. 527,) stating that in Acts, iv. the apostles lifted up "their voices with one accord to God in the very words of the Psalms," adding, verse 27, "For of a truth, against thy holy child Jesus, whom thou hast anointed, both Herod and Pontius Pilate. with the Gentiles, and the people of Israel, were

gathered together." Secondly, he quotes Psalm. xvi. 8—11, comparing them with Acts, ii. 25—27; 3rdly, Psalm, xxii. 1, comparing it with Heb., ii. 10—12; 4thly, Psalm, xxxi. 5, while he repeats Psalm, xl. 6—8, comparing them to Hebrews, x. 4; 5thly, Psalm, xlv. 6—7, comparing them with Hebrews, i 8—12; 6thly, Psalm, lxviii. 18, applying it to Ephesians, iv. 8—11; 7thly, Psalm, lxix. 1, 2, comparing them with John, ii. 17, "The zeal of thy house hath eaten me up;" and with Romans, xv. 3, "Even Christ pleased not himself; but, as it is written, The reproaches of them that reproached thee fell on me;" 8thly, Psalm, lxxii 7—11, 17; 9thly, Psalm, lxxxix 19—37: 10thly, Psalm. cii. 4, 5, 10, quoting immediately after this Heb., i. 7, without comparing one with the other; 11thly, Psalm, cxviii. 22, 12thly, Psalm, cx. 1 4 After having filled up more than six pages (527—533) with the quotations of the above Psalms, the Editor observes, that, "notwithstanding the abundant evidence of the atonement, and even the deity of Christ, already adduced from the Pentateuch and the Psalms," &c. But I regret that none of these Psalms appear to me to bear the least reference to the principle of vicarious sacrifice, as an atonement for sin, except Psalm fourteenth in which a declaration of the displeasure of Jehovah at sacrifice in general is made, and which I have fully examined in the preceding paragraphs. I therefore beg my readers to look over all the Psalms introduced here by the Editor and to form their opinion whether these are properly applied to the discussion of the doctrine of the atonement; and should they find them having little or no relation to a proof of the atonement, they may then judge whether the frequent complaint of the Editor, of *the want* of *room*, is or is not well-founded.

I will examine his attempt to prove the deity of Jesus, from some of these Psalms, in a subsequent chapter on the Trinity, but cannot omit to notice here two or three remarks made by the Editor, in the course of quoting these Psalms, on some of my assertions in the Second Appeal, leaving a decision on them to the free judgment of the public. The Editor having quoted Psalm, xl. 6—8, and compared these verses with Hebrews, x. 4—7, 9, thus concludes; (p. 528) "By these declarations various facts are established. They inform us that the grand design of the Son in becoming man was that of being a sacrifice; which fully refutes our author's assertion, (p. 58) that the sole object of his mission was to preach and impart divine instructions. The Editor, I am sorry to say, following a frequent practice of his other

orthodox brethren, omits the immediately following verses, which thoroughly explain whether "the will of God," mentioned in ver. 8 of the Psalm quoted by the Editor, implies sacrifice or divine instructions:—"I delight to do thy will, O my God: yea, thy *law* is within my heart.—*I have preached* righteousness in the *great congregation*: lo, I have not refrained my lips, O Lord, thou knowest. *I have not hid* thy righteousness within my heart; *I have declared thy faithfulness and the salvation; I have not concealed thy loving kindness and thy truth* from the great congregation. It is now left to the public to judge whether Psalm, fortieth, quoted by the Editor, establishes that "the grand design of the Son in becoming man was that of being a sacrifice," or of preaching the righteousness of God to the world, and declaring his truth and salvation to them. The preparing of the body for the Son, as found in Hebrews, x. 5, implies, of course, the necessity of his being furnished with a body in preaching the will of God to mortal men, a body which, in the fulfilment of his commission, Jesus never valued, but exposed to danger, and virtually offered as a sacrifice.

It is worth observing, that the Editor, though he affirms positively that the grand object of the Son's appearing in this world was to be a sacrifice, and not to inculcate divine instructions and thinks it proper to rest his position upon a comparison of the above Psalm with Hebrews, yet never attempts to reconcile to this notion the verses pointed out in page 155 of my Second Appeal, proving that the object of his mission was to preach and impart divine instructions. Are we to place greater reliance on his bare affirmation, or on the authority of Jesus himself, the Lord and King of Jews and Gentiles?

Not finding a single assertion in the Scriptures that can support his above notion, the Editor lays stress upon John, x. 17: "Therefore doth my Father love me, because I lay down my life, that I might take it again." Do these words imply anything more than his attributing the love of the Father towards the Son, to his implicit obedience, even to the loss of his own life, taken by the rebellious Jews? Should a general inform his fellow-soldiers, that his king is attached to him, in consequence of his being ready to give up his life in the discharge of his duty, can we thence infer that the grand design of the king, in appointing him general, is his death, and not his reconciling rebels to their merciful king, through friendly entreaty and offers of amnesty, which we know he has employed?

The second conclusion of the Editor from the above quoted Psalm and Hebrews is, that "they also demonstrate that the Son delighted in offering himself a sacrifice; which refutes that dreadful assertion, that Jesus declared great aversion to the death of the cross, and merely yielded to it, as knowing that the will of his Father rendered such death unavoidable." I find no mention made in Hebrews, x, much less in Psalm, xl. of the Son's "delighting in offering himself as a sacrifice;" on the contrary, it is evidently found in Hebrews x, that whatever the Son performed with the body prepared him was entirely through his implicit obedience to the will of the Father. Verse 7: "Then said I," (the Son) "Lo, I come to do thy will, O God." "Then said he," (the Son) "Lo, I come to do thy will, O God," ver 9: an assertion which is thoroughly confirmed by what I quoted in my Second Appeal, (p. 158,) part of which I am necessitated to repeat here, to shew that Jesus, (whether as man or God, let the Editor decide,) declared great aversion to death, yet yielded to it in common with many other prophets, knowing that the will of his Father rendered such death unavoidable. Matthew, xxvi. 37—39, 42: "And he took with him Peter and the two sons of Zebedee, and began to be sorrowful and very heavy. Then said he unto them my soul is *exceeding sorrowful even unto death.* And prayed, saying, O my Father, if it be possible, let this cup" (meaning death) "pass from me; nevertheless, *not as I will*, but as thou wilt. He went away again the second time, and prayed, saying, O my Father, if this cup may not pass away from me, except I drink it, thy will be done." Mark, xiv. 36: "And he said, Abba, Father, all things are possible unto thee; *Take away this cup from me:* nevertheless, not what I will, but what thou wilt." Luke, xxii. 42, 44: "Saying, Father, if thou be willing remove this cup from me: nevertheless, not my will, but thine be done. And being in an agony, he prayed more earnestly; and his sweat was as it were great drops of blood falling down to the ground."

Now, let the Editor find out a set of verses, or even a single passage, which may evince that Jesus, so far from feeling aversion to death, delighted in it, as he has attempted to prove; and let him take upon himself to reconcile such gross contradictions between those two sets of passages, (if there be any such,) or reject one set of them.

The third conclusion of the Editor, from the above Psalm, and the compared passage of Hebrews, is, that "they furnish a complete answer to the declaration (p. 62,) that it would be a piece of gross

iniquity to afflict one innocent being, who had all the human feelings, and who had never transgressed the will of God, with the death of the cross for the crimes committed by others," and (p. 63) that "the iniquity of one's being sentenced to death as an atonement for the fault committed by another, is such, that every just man would shudder at the idea of one's being put to death for a crime committed by another, even if the innocent man should willingly offer his life in behalf of that other." The Editor then maintains, that the texts quoted (Psalms and Hebrews) refute the above positions, stating, that "this iniquity, if it be such, the Father willed, since he prepared the Son a body in which to suffer this palpable injustice." In this I perfectly coincide with the Editor, that the death of the innocent Jesus took place, like that of many preceding prophets, by the unsearchable will of God, who hath ordained that all the sons of men shall die, some by a violent and painful death, others by an easy and natural extinction; nor do I require the evidence of the text quoted ("Thou hast prepared me a body") to convince me of the fact, declared by Jesus in his agony in the garden, that his sufferings in particular were, like those of mankind in general, conformable to the will of God But I cannot find anything in these words that warrants an inference so contrary to our ideas of justice as that the pain thus suffered by Jesus was inflicted on him, though innocent, by God, as an atonement to himself for withholding merited punishment from the truly guilty. And this is the real point in discussion. The Editor will admit that the ways of God, in bestowing happiness on some, and leaving others, in our eyes more worthy of divine favour, to wretchedness and misery, are inscrutable; yet, on the bare fact, that the innocent Jesus was ordained to die on the cross, he pretends to rest the conclusion, as the only possible one, that this death he suffered to satisfy the justice of his Maker. Was it for this that John the Baptist was beheaded? Was it for this that Zechariah was slain? Was it as an atonement for the sins of the rest of mankind, that Jerusalem was suffered to "stone the prophets and kill those who were sent to her"? The Editor will not admit that it was; yet the proposed inference from the bare fact would be as legitimate in these cases, as in that of Jesus. The plain and obvious conclusion to be drawn from the text is, that God prepared for Christ a body, that he might communicate a perfect code of divine law to mankind, and that he loved him for the devotion with which he fulfilled his divine

commission, regardless of the comfort or safety of that body, and his readiness to lay it down when it suited the purpose of the Maker.

The Rev. Editor expresses his indignation at the mode of reasoning adopted by me, in the passages above quoted; saying, "should not a creature, a worm of the dust, who cannot fully comprehend the mysteries of his own being, pause before he arraign his Maker of gross injustice, and charge him with having founded all religion on an act of palpable iniquity?" (Page 529.)

There appears here a most strange mistake on the part of the Editor. It is he who seems to me to be labouring to prove the absurdity that God, the Almighty and All-merciful, is capable of a palpable iniquity—determined to have punishment, though he leave quite unpunished; inflicting the marks of his wrath on the innocent *for the purpose* of sparing those who justly deserve the weight of its terrors. If he mean to object to the rashness of applying the limited capacity of the human understanding to judge the unsearchable things of the wisdom of God, and therefore denies my right, as a worm of the dust to deduce anything from human ideas inimical to his view of the divine will, I can only say that I have for my example that of a fellow-worm in his own argument to shew the necessity that the Almighty laboured under to have his justice satisfied. For I find this very Editor in his endeavour to prove the doctrine of the atonement arguing (page 506) thus: "He who has kept the law has not broken it, and he who has broken it cannot have kept it: that the same man, therefore, should incur its penalty for violating it and also deserve its reward for keeping it, is an *outrage on common sense*." "This will clearly" appear, if we refer to human laws, imperfect as they are "Apply this to the divine law." "For him, therefore to be rewarded as one who had kept the divine law would be directly contrary to righteousness." "Human judges inquire not [about the] repentance of the robber or murderer, but respecting his guilt."

From these passages does it not appear, as if the Editor were of opinion that it is quite right and proper to apply human reason as a standard by which to judge what must be the will of God, when he thinks it supports his views of the ways of Providence; but that, on the contrary, it is blasphemous and rebellious against the divine majesty to deduce, from human reason, conclusions from the scriptures contrary to his interpretations of them of The Editor has not

attempted to dispute that, applied to human affairs, the motive to which he assigns the will of God, in ordaining the death of Jesus on the cross, would be palpably iniquitous. Should not this induce him to pause, and permit nothing but the most express and positive declaration, couched in language not capable of being explained in a metaphorical sense, to sway him to a belief so irreconcilable to common sense? Yet he is willing to assume at once this conclusion, on the bare fact that Jesus was provided with a body.

Do not orthodox divines often offer it as a reason for the necessity of an atonement being made for the crimes of men, that it would be inequitable in the perfect nature of the just God, to remit sin, without some sort of punishment being inflicted for it, as a satisfaction to his justice? Do they not, in consequence, represent the death of Jesus *as an atonement* for the sins of *mankind*? If they do, and are allowed to do so, I think myself also authorized to urge, in reference to human notions of justice, that "it would be a piece of gross iniquity to afflict one innocent being, who had all the human feelings and who had never transgressed the will of God, with the death of the cross, for crimes committed by others, especially when he declares such great aversion to it." But if the Editor abandon this mode of reasoning, and confess the unsearchable, inscrutable nature, both of divine justice and of divine mercy, I am perfectly ready and willing to do the same.

The Editor now refers to the prophets, (p. 533,) saying, that Isaiah, in ch. vii. "predicting the birth of Christ, identifies his divine and his human nature." As Isaiah, vii. 14. and ix. 6. have no relation whatever to the doctrine of atonement, I deem it proper to defer the notice of them to the subsequent chapter on the Trinity.

The Editor, in his next quotation from Isaiah, first introduces ch. xi. 3. "And he shall make him" (Jesus) "of quick understanding in the fear of the Lord:" but my limited capacity has failed to enable me to ascertain what he really means to establish by the quotation of this passage, (p. 536.) The Editor was in the course of an attempt to prove the deity and the atonement of Jesus Christ, but the force of truth would appear to have induced him here to cite a verse which, containing such phrases as—"make him of quick understanding," and "the fear of the Lord," go to prove his created nature. In like manner, I must confess my inability to discover

any allusion whatever to the atonement, in his next quotation from Isaiah, xix. 19, 20.

The Editor having endeavoured, in his former Review, to prove the doctrine of the atonement from the application of the term "Saviour" to Jesus, I noticed in my Second Appeal, that "we find the title Saviour applied frequently in the divine writings to those who have been endued with the power of saving nations, whether in a spiritual sense, by the imparting of the divine will, or by affording temporary protection to them; although none of those saving prophets or princes atoned for the sins of their fellow-creatures by their death;" and, that "all those who have been instrumental in effecting the deliverance of their fellow-creatures, from evils of whatever nature, were dependent themselves upon God, and only instruments in his hand." The Editor, though unable to deny this fact, thus turns away the subject; saying. "It surely required but little knowledge to discern, that a man's delivering his country does not elevate him to an equality with God, or, that to overcome an invading enemy is an act totally different from saving sinners from their sins." But the force of truth again makes the Rev. Editor quote here the following passage, ("and he *shall send them* a Saviour, and a great one, and he shall deliver them,") which does not only refute his own position, but proves that I advanced in my Second Appeal; that is, Christ and others, who saved people at different times, in their peculiar capacities, were dependent themselves upon God, and only instruments in his hands. Is it not possible for God, who could raise, as the Editor confesses, personages to save men, by their miraculous strength, from the grasp of their enemies, to raise one to save mankind from sin through his divine instructions? If not, how should we reconcile such disavowal of the power of God to the following assertion of the evangelist Matthew, that the people "glorified God, who had given such power to men"? (ix. 8). And if Jesus was not entitled to the appellation of a saviour from the saving power of his divine instructions, in what sense should we understand those declarations of Jesus himself, to be found even in a single Gospel. John, v. 24, vi. 63, xv. 3?

To his question, "When, previously to Christ's coming, did the Egyptians cry to Jehovah for deliverance, and when, previously, was Israel the third with Egypt and the Assyrians," my answer must be in the negative; that is, neither previous to Christ's coming did the

Egyptians cry to Jehovah and join the Assyrians and Israel, a blessing in the midst of the land, nor have they subsequently to the coming of Jesus, up to this day, cried to the God of Israel, or joined Israel and the Assyrians in asking a divine blessing.

The Editor says, (p. 537,) that "in ch. xxxv. the blessings of Christ's kingdom are declared in the most glowing language." I do not dispute it in the least. If verse 10 ("the ransomed of the Lord shall return," &c.) have any allusion to Jesus, it must have reference to his implicit obedience to the will of Jehovah, even to the laying down of his own life for the safety of mankind, as explained in my Second Appeal, (p. 166). Any one who has a tolerable knowledge of the idiom of Hebrew or Arabic, or even of Persian, must be aware that the word "ransom" פִּדְיוֹם or فِدَا is often used to express extreme attachment or obedience, without implying an actual sacrifice as an atonement for sins.

He again quotes Isaiah, xlii. 2, 21, "He shall not cry," &c. "The Lord is well pleased for his righteousness' sake," but I am unable, also to discover what these quotations have to do with Christ's atoning for sin as a sacrifice in lieu of goats and bullocks. So, 2 Corinthians, v. 21, "For he hath made him to be sin," &c. has no reference to the atonement, which the Editor insists upon: it implies no more than "God hath made him subject to sufferings and death, the usual punishment and consequence of sin, as if he had been a sinner, though he were guilty of no sin; that we, in and by him, might be made righteous, by a righteousness imputed to us by God." See Locke's works, Vol. viii, page 232.

The Rev. Editor now refers to ch. liii. of Isaiah, laying great stress upon such phrases as the following, found in that chapter: "Surely he hath borne our griefs and carried our sorrows," "He was wounded for our transgressions," "The Lord hath laid on him the iniquities of us all;" "He shall bear their intiquities." Do these sentences prove that he, like a sacrificial "lamb" or "sheep," atoned for the sins of others? Did ever a sacrificial lamb or goat bear the iniquities of men? The scape-goats are stated to have borne the iniquities of Israel—a circumstance far from being applicable to Christ, even typically; for he, as was predicted, made no escape from the hands of his enemies. My readers may peruse the whole of ch. liii. and may find that it conveys but the idea that Jesus, as a prince, though innocent himself, was to suffer afflictions, or rather

death, for the transgressions of his guilty people, while interceding for them with a king mightier than himself.

To this question of the Editor, "Is our repentance sufficient to make atonement with the All-merciful?" my answer must be in the affirmative, since we find the direct authority of the author of this religion, and his forerunner, John the Baptist, requiring us to have recourse to repentance as the means of procuring pardon for sin. (*Vide* page 24.) Had the human race never transgressed, or had they repented sincerely of their tranrgressions, the Son of God need not have been sent to teach them repentance for the pardon of their sins, to lay before them the divine law, calculated to prevent their further transgressions, the fulfilment of which commission was at the cost of his life.

As I have already noticed (in page 46 et. seq. Final Appeal) the Editor's reference to human ideas of justice in support of the doctrine of atonement, and his censuring me for the same mode of reference to natural equity, I will not renew the subject here.

The Editor seems contented with the quotation of only two passages of Jeremiah, viz., ch. xxiii. 5, "Behold, the days come, saith Jehovah, that I will raise unto David a righteous branch," &c. and ch. xxxi. 31, 33, as being quoted in Heb., viii. 8, 10, "Behold, the days come, saith the Lord, when I will make a new covenant with the house of Israel and the land of Judah. I will put my law in their inward parts," &c. The Editor then quotes (p. 539) 1 Cor. i. 30, "Christ is made unto us wisdom, righteousness, sanctification, and redemption." But what these quotations have to do with the vicarious sacrifice of Christ, I am again at a loss to perceive; being able to discover in them nothing more than a prophecy and its fulfilment, that Christ was to be sent to direct mankind to sincerity in worship, righteousness in conduct, sanctification in purity of mind, and salvation by repentance.

The Editor then advances, that "Ezekiel also predicts the promised Redeemer in ch. xxxiv. 23. He says, 'I will set up one shepherd over them, and he shall feed them, even my servant David; and he shall be their shepherd,'" I never denied, in any of my publications, that Jesus was sent as the promised Messiah, nor did I ever interpret the above passages, as some Jewish writers, that the Messiah would be not only of the race of David, but also of his spirit. How is it, then, that the Editor thinks it necessary to attempt so often to prove the kingdom and redemption of Jesus as the promised Messiah

in the course of his arguments in favor of the atonement? He afterwards quotes Daniel, ix. 26—"Shall the Messiah be cut off, but not for himself." There is no term in the original Hebrew passage answering to the words "*but*" or "*himself*," found in the English version. We find in the Hebrew ואין לו, "No person or nothing for him;" that is, "Shall Messiah be cut off, and no one be for him." The translators used the term "but," instead of "and," as in the Hebrew, and the term "himself," in lieu of "him." In illustration I shall here cite the same phrase found in other instances, both in the original Hebrew Scriptures and their translation also, in the English version. Exodus, xxii. 2, אין לו דמים "No blood be shed for him." Numbers, xxvii. 4, אין לו בן, "He hath no son." Psalm, lxxii. 12, ואין עזר לו, "And him that hath no helper." Daniel, xi. 45, ואין עוזר לו, "And none shall help him." But, even were we to admit this mistranslation or perversion of the original Scriptures, the words, "Shall the Messiah be cut off, but not for himself," would, to my mind, convey nothing more than that the Messiah should be cut off, not for any guilt he committed himself, but the fault of his subjects, who continued to rebel against the divine law, though instructed by their intercessor, even at the hazard of his own life.

The Editor quotes Hosea, iii. 5, "Afterward shall the children of Isreal return and seek the Lord their God, and David their king," &c.; and Joel, ii. 28, "And it shall come to pass afterward, that I will pour out my spirit upon all flesh, and your sons and your daughters shall prophesy," &c.; and also Amos, ix. 11, "In that day will I raise up the tabernacle of David which is fallen," &c. Had he been pleased to shew the tendency of these quotations to the proof of the vicarious sacrifice of Jesus, I would endeavour to examine the connection between them: as he has omitted to do so, and their relation to the question is certainly not obvious, I must spare myself the trouble.

The Rev. Editor says, (p. 541,) "Nor does Obadiah, in his short prophecy, wholly omit the Redeemer's kingdom. He alludes thereto in verse 21: 'And saviours shall come up on Mount Zion to judge the Mount of Esau: and the kingdom shall be Jehovah's,'" To justify the application to Jesus of the noun "saviours," though found in the plural form, he thus argues: "Should he" (the author of the Appeals) "reply, that as the plural number 'saviours' is used, this cannot refer to Christ; we ask him whether he has not affirmed, that the plural form is often used in a singular sense, as of his masters, meaning, his master, has

given him a wife' "? The Editor, as a diligent student of the Scriptures, should have known that the noun in question, "saviours," being accompanied with the plural verb וְעָלוּ, "they shall come up," is by no means an analogous case to that of the term "masters" as found in Exod., xxi, 4, which is connected with the verb singular יִרְצֵן whereas, in Neh., ix. 27, the term "saviours" is associated with the verb in the plural form and the past tense, as well as with the pronoun plural.

I must, therefore, maintain the correctness of reading "saviours' in Obadiah as required in the former alternative of the question put by the Editor, (page 541, line 34,) finding myself unable to "acknowledge the triune God," as proposed by him in the latter alternative: for having relinquished the notion of the triune, quadrune. and decimune gods, which I once professed, when immersed in the grosser polytheism prevailing among modern Hindoos, I cannot reconcile it to my understanding to find plausibility in one case, while the same notion is of acknowledged absurdity in another. The Editor admits (p. 536) the application of the term Saviour to human individuals, as pointed out by me, (Second Appeal, p. 248,) but he is anxious to prove the doctrine of the atonement by the application of that very term to Jesus.

The Editor says, (p. 542,) that "Micah, in ch. iv., describes Christ's kingdom nearly in the same terms with Isaiah, and in ch. v., he repeats the place of his birth: 'Thou, Bethlehem Ephratah, out of thee shall he come forth unto me—whose goings forth have been of old, from everlasting.' The testimony to the eternal deity of Christ, given in connection with his birth as man, it is wrong to overlook." Any testimony relating to the birth of Jesus having nothing to do with his atonement, is not in place here; but I will examine the verse here cited in the subsequent part of this discussion, when we come to the subject of the Trinity.

He quotes again Nahum, i. 15, for the purpose of proving Christ's kingdom, which is a subject totally foreign to that of the vicarious sacrifice of Jesus. "Habakkuk" (says the Editor p. 542) "was evidently no stranger to the doctrine founded on the atonement;" and he then quotes the passage, "The just shall live by his faith," as corroborated by Paul, Rom., i. 17, and Gal., iii. 2; and "the earth shall be filled with the knowledge of Jehovah," &c. But what faith in, and knowledge of, God, as well as faith in the perfection of his attributes, and in prophets sent by him, has to do with the atonement, I am at a loss to discover. Does the bare mention of faith by Habakkuk of other

prophets prove his or their familiarity with the sacrificial death of Jesus?

He quotes the passage of Haggai, ii. "Thus saith Jehovah; the desire of all nations shall come and will fill this house with glory—the glory of this latter house shall be greater than that of the former, saith Jehovah of hosts," which the Editor thinks affords decided proof respecting both the atonement and the deity of Christ. It is however too deep for my shallow understanding to discover from this passage an allusion to either of these doctrines, much less that it is a decided proof of them. Were we to understand by the word "temple" in both instances in the verse a *material* one, which, it is evident from its context in the prophecy, was alone in the contemplation of Haggai, we must be persuaded to believe that the latter temple was more magnificently built by Zerubbabel and Joshua, in the reign of Darius than the former built by Solomon. Should the *spiritual* temple be understood by the latter term in the above, it would be regarded naturally superior to a material one without the necessity of "Jehovah's coming into it clothed in our nature."

He quotes Zechariah, iii. 8 and 9, and vi. 12 and 13, wherein there is not the slightest mention of the atonement. As to his attempt to prove the deity of Jesus from these passages, I will notice it in a subsequent chapter. The phrase found in the verse ("I will remove the iniquity of that land in one day") does not attribute the removal of the iniquities of the land of Israel to the sacrificial death of Jesus, so as to justify the Editor in quoting it as a proof of the doctrine of the atonement. Besides, the verse can by no means be applied to the death of Jesus, whether vicarious or accidental, since, after the day of his crucifixion, the Israelites, so far from being freed from sins, continued more vehemently than ever to pursue sinful conduct in their violent persecution of Christians. So the Jews have been punished to this day, as Christians believe, on account of their outrages upon the body of Jesus, and their disobedience to him. The remaining passage of Zechariah (pages 543—548,) and verse 1st of Ch. III. of Malachi, (page 548,) quoted by the Editor in support of the deity of Jesus, I will notice afterwards.

I am sorry I cannot agree with the Editor in his assertion (page 549) that "had our Lord himself made no direct declaration respecting the design of his death, his referring his disciples to those predictions already named would have been sufficient, particularly in

their circumstances;" for it would be strange to suppose that Jesus should have omitted to inculcate so important a doctrine, and so fundamental for salvation, (according to the Editor) both before and after his resurrection, while he was constantly enjoying love to God, to neighbours, and to each other, and also repentance, in case of failure in obedience. How is it possible to think, unless biassed by early prejudices, that a teacher, a truly divine teacher, who, by declaring himself publicly the son of God,* and the king of the Jews,* as predicted, brought death upon himself, should have kept concealed the doctrine of the atonement, if such were the main source of salvation, from his own apostles, even after his resurrection, and have left them to deduce so material a point from the obscure predictions of the prophets, which are susceptible of so many different interpretations?

The Editor then affirms, that "it is evident that direct intimations of his nature were not withheld: such were, his declaring to them" (his apostles) "that he came to give his life a ransom for many—his conversing with Moses and Elias, (Luke, ix. 31.) —his declaring that the Son of Man should be betrayed into the hands of men, and be killed, and rise again the third day—that he was about to give his flesh for the life of the world, and to lay down his life for his sheep —and his discourse with them, 'This is my body, which is broken for you;' 'This is my blood of the New Testament, which is shed for many for the remission of sins;' 'Thus it is written, and thus it behoved Christ to suffer, and to rise from the dead the third day.'" As the Rev. Editor quoted some of these verses in his former Review, I noticed them in the Second Appeal. Entirely overlooking my observations, however, he has thought proper to repeat them here, with some additions. This is indeed a strange mode of conducting a controversy; but it lays me under the necessity of again adducing my remarks in the Second Appeal on those passages. They are as follows:—"Do these passages reasonably convey anything more than the idea that Jesus was invested with a divine commission to deliver instructions leading to eternal beatitude, which, whosoever should receive, should live forever? And that the Saviour, foreseeing that the imparting of those instructions would, by exciting the anger and enmity of the superstitious Jews, cause his life to be destroyed, yet hesitated not to persevere in their promulgation; as if a king, who

* John, xix. 7, 12.

hazards his life to procure freedom and peace for his subjects, were to address himself to them saying, 'I lay down my life for you.' This interpretation is fully confirmed by the following passages. Luke, iv. 43: 'And he said unto them, I must preach the kingdom of God to other cities also; for therefore I am sent.' Ch. ii. 47—49: 'And all that heard him were astonished at his understanding and answers. And when they (his parents) saw him, they were amazed: and his mother said unto him, Son, why hast thou thus dealt with us? Behold, thy father and I have sought thee sorrowing. And he said unto them, How is it that ye sought me? wist ye not that I must be about my Father's business?' Wherein Jesus declares, that the sole object of his commission was to preach and impart divine instructions. Again, he instructed his disciples in the divine law and will, as appears from the following text: 'For I have given unto them the words which thou gavest me; and they have received them, and have known surely that I came out from thee, and they have believed that thou didst send me.' (John, xvii. 8.) Jesus, in communing with God, manifests that he had completed the object of his commission by imparting divine commandments to mankind. 'I have glorified thee on the earth, *I have finished* the work which thou gavest me to do.' Had his death on the cross been the work, or part of the work for the performance of which Jesus came into this world, he, as the founder of truth, would not have declared himself *to have finished* the work prior to his death." I now beg that the Editor will be pleased to reconcile all the above passages to his position, that the death of Jesus on the cross was the sole object of his appearance in this world, and that his precepts were a mere code of morality inadequate to procure salvation. Had not Jesus disregarded his life, and suffered his blood to be shed, as predicted, in the delivery of the will of the Father, the whole of the Jews would have still remained sunk in superstition, and the Gentiles in idolatry, and there would have been no perfect security for the remission of sins and the attainment of eternal comfort in those sayings. Hence the gracious benefactor alludes to this act of delivery from sins, through divine instructions, even at the expense of his own life, and not to an actual sacrificial death as an equal value or compensation for the sin pardoned, since the New Testament declares that God forgives mankind *freely*, without any equivalent. Romans, iii. 24, "Being justified *freely*, (δωρεὰν *gratis*) by his grace, through the redemption that is in Jesus Christ."

So Romans, viii. 32, 15, 16, 18, confirms the idea of justification by the free grace of God. For the further illustration of this subject, I quote the paraphrase on the above cited verse, (Rom., iii. 24,) by Locke, one of the greatest men that ever lived, and his notes on its different expressions. Locke's Works, Vol. viii. p. 304, Paraphrase on verses 24 and 25: "Being made righteous gratis, by the favour of God, through the redemption which is by Jesus Christ; whom God hath set forth to be the propitiatory, or mercy-seat, in his own blood, for the manifestation of his (God's) righteousness, by passing over their transgressions, formerly committed, which he hath bore with hitherto, so as to withhold his hand from casting off the nation of the Jews, as their past sins deserved."

Note on the word Redemption, verse 24: "Redemption signifies deliverance, but not deliverance from every thing, but deliverance from that to which a man is in subjection or bondage. Nor does redemption by Jesus Christ import, there was any compensation made to God, by paying what was of equal value, in consideration whereof they were delivered; for that is inconsistent with what St. Paul expressly says here, viz. that sinners are justified by God gratis, and of his free bounty. What this redemption is, St. Paul tells us, Eph., i. 7, Col., i. 14, 'even the forgiveness of sins.' But if St. Paul had not been so express in defining what he means by redemption, they yet would be thought to lay too much stress upon the criticism of a word, in the translation, who would thereby force from the word, in the original, a necessary sense which it is plain it hath not. That redeeming, in the sacred Scripture language, signifies not precisely paying an equivalent, is so clear that nothing can be more. I shall refer my reader to three or four places amongst a great number, Exod., vi. 6, Deut., vii. 8, xv. 12, and xxiv. 18. But if any one will, from the literal signification of the word in English, persist in it, against Paul's declarations, that it necessarily implies an equivalent price paid, I desire him to consider to whom; and that, if we strictly adhere to the metaphor, it must be to those whom the redeemed are in bondage to, and from whom we are redeemed, viz. Sin and Satan. If he will not believe his own system for this, let him believe St. Paul's words, Tit., ii. 14:—'Who gave himself for us, that he might redeem us from all iniquity.' Nor could the price be paid to God, in strictness of justice, (for that is made the argument here,) unless the same person ought, by that strict justice, to have both the thing redeemed, and

the price paid for its redemption; for it is to God we are redeemed, by the death of Christ; Rev., v. 9: 'Thou wast slain, and hast redeemed us to God by thy blood.'"

Note upon the word mercy-seat, verse 25: "ἱλαστηριον signifies propitiatory, or mercy-seat, and not propitiation, as Mr. Mede has rightly observed upon this place, in his discourse on God's house."

The Editor fills about a page and a half (a part of 550 and the whole of 550) with quotations from the writings of the apostles, to substantiate the doctrine of the atonement, beginning with Rom., iii. 24, already quoted by me; but as those teachers merely illustrated the sayings of their gracious Master, their writings must be understood with reference only to what had been taught by him. I will, therefore, not prolong the present subject of discussion by examining those passages separately, especially as I have already noticed some of them in the course of the examination of the Psalms and Prophets. Being desirous to shew that my interpretation of these is fully supported by scriptural authorities, I will only refer to a few texts explanatory of the terms sacrifice, ransom, offering, and the taking away the sins of the world, as ascribed to Jesus. Rom., v. 10; Heb., ii. 17; Eph., v. 2; Heb., v. 1, viii. 3, ix. 14, 23, 26; Tit., ii. 12—14; Heb., xiii. 12; Rev., i. 5; Eph., i. 7; Luke, i. 77; Matt., xx. 28; Mark, x. 45; i Tim., ii. 6.

Now I beg that my reader will be pleased to determine whether it would be more consistent with the context, and with the benevolent spirit of the Christian dispensation, to understand such words literally, and thus found the salvation attainable by Christianity, upon flesh and blood, human or divine; or whether it would not rather be thoroughly reasonable and scriptural, as well as consistent with the religion of Jesus, to take them in a spiritual sense as explained by the apostles themselves.

As the Editor's illustrative remarks upon the atonement (pages 552 and 553) rest entirely on the arguments previously adduced I will leave them unnoticed, having already examined those in the preceding chapters, except only his queries, "What shall we say to his impugning" (p. 108) "the doctrine of Christ's divine and human nature, even after having acknowledged it in chapter the second; and to his ridiculing his intercession?" &c., to which I must reply. It is perfectly optional with the Editor to say for or against any one whatever his conscience may permit; nevertheless

I shall, from the dictates of my own conscience, reject absolutely such unaccountable ideas as a mixed nature of God and man, as maintained by the Editor, as I have previously rejected the idea of a mixed nature of God, man, and lion, (नृसिंहावतार) in which Hindoos profess their faith. I have not the most distant recollection of acknowledging Christ's divine and human nature, and shall therefore feel obliged if the Editor will have the goodness to point out in what passage of chapter second of my Appeal I acknowledged this mystery. I have never, so far as I am aware, ridiculed, even in thought, the intercession of Jesus for mankind: I therefore hope that Christian charity will restrain the Editor from imputing to me in future such a charge. I only intended to refute the argument adduced by Trinitarians, that no being can intercede with another being for a third one, unless the mediator be possessed of the nature of the being with whom, as well as of those for whom, he intercedes.

To this assertion of the Editor, "the blood of no *mere creature* could take away sin," I add the assertion also maintained by the Editor that, "the Creator is not composed of blood and flesh," and leave to him to say, if the blood of Jesus was not that of a creature whose blood it was. It is evident from the circumstance of the blood of a creature being unable to take away sin, and the Creator having no blood, that the taking away of sin can have no connection with blood or a bloody sacrifice.

The Editor declares, (p. 554,) that "no one but Jehovah, the unchangeable God, could atone for sin, justify the sinner, and change his heart: the Father himself witnesses that it is Jehovah whom he hath appointed to this glorious work." "He humbled himself by becoming in our nature the Mediator between God and men." Nothing that I can conceive, but prejudice in favour of the Trinity, can prevent the Editor from perceiving gross inconsistency between his declaring Jesus to be the unchangeable Jehovah, and also to have been appointed by Jehovah, according to whose will the former Jehovah humbled himself in becoming in our nature a Mediator. How could the unchangeable Jehovah be endued with a new honour which he had not prior to his appointment by the latter Jehovah? How could the unchangeable God change his condition by assuming a new nature? If the acceptance of a new state of honour, the assuming of a new nature, or the alteration of properties, such as magnitude and other conditions, be not considered as changes in an object,

all phenomena may safely, according to the Editor's maxim, be called unchangeable; and consequently the application of the term "unchangeable" being common to Jehovah, and those who are not Jehovah, can imply no peculiar ground of distinction or reverence for Jehovah. The Editor says, (p. 545,) "Nor does it" (the Scripture) "give us the least hint that God ever has imparted any one infinite perfection to a finite creature. This, indeed, is impossible in its own nature." I therefore beg to ask, whether or not, on the same ground, it is not impossible in its own nature that the whole of the omnipresent God should be brought into a circumference of a small space subjected to all human feelings, and clothed at one time with two opposite natures, human and divine?

The Rev. Editor, in the concluding part of the subject of the atonement, attempts to prove the infinite perfection of Jesus, forgetting, perhaps, the denial made by Jesus himself of omniscience, as well as omnipotence as narrated in the evangelical writings. He entirely avoids here noticing what I stated in proof of the finite effects of Christ's appearance in the world; which I now repeat, and beg that the Editor will favour me with a reply thereto. My argument is, "That the effects of Christ's appearance on earth, whether with respect to the salvation or condemnation of mankind were *finite*, and therefore suitable to the nature of a finite being to accomplish, is evident from the fact, that to the present time millions of human beings are daily passing through the world, whom the doctrines he taught have never reached, and who of course must be considered as excluded from the benefit of his having died for the remission of their sins" (Second Appeal, p. 170,). Besides, it is worth observing, that an avowal of the beginning of creation, and of its end, amounts to a proof of the finite number of creatures, however numerous they may be; therefore atonement even for the remission of the sins of all of them must be of a finite nature.

Should it be alleged that the sins committed by a single individual, in the limited period of his life, though they are finite in themselves, yet are committed against the infinite God and thereby they are infinite, and that an atonement on the part of an infinite being is therefore necessary for their remission; I shall reply—In the first place, the assertion that the guilt committed against an infinite Being is infinite in its consequences, is entirely unsupported by reason or proof, and is contrary to scriptural authorities; for we find that

the Israelites were, from time to time, afflicted with finite punishment for the sins they committed against the infinite God. 1 Chronicles, xxi. 12; "So God came to David, and said unto him, Thus saith the Lord, choose thee either *three years' famine, or three months* to be destroyed before thy foes, while that the sword of thine enemies overtake thee; or *else three days* the sword of the Lord, even the pestilence, in the land, and the angel of the Lord destroying throughout all the coasts of Israel," &c. Ver. 15: "And God sent an angel unto Jerusalem, to destroy it; and as he was destroying, the Lord *beheld, and he repented him of the evil*, and said to the angel that destroyed, It is enough, stay now thine hand," &c. Judges, xiii. 1: "And the children of Israel did evil in the sight of the Lord: and the Lord delivered them into the hand of the Philistines *forty years*."

In the second place, were we to admit the truth of this argument, we must, upon the same ground, as far as reason suggests, esteem a good act, done for the honour of the commandment of the infinite God, or a prayer offered to propitiate the Divine Majesty, to be also worthy of infinite reward as its effect. Under these circumstances we cannot help observing, that among those that believe in any revelation, either true or received as true, there is, probably, no man that has not performed, at least, one single righteous act during the whole period of his life; but as he is a mortal and imperfect being, he cannot be supposed to have escaped every sin in this tempting world: every man, then, must be both guilty of infinite sin and an agent of infinite virtue. If we suppose that this very person is to be punished for eternity, according to the Editor, for the infinite sin he has committed, there will be no opportunity of his enjoying an infinite reward for his good work; but, according to the position, he must be either rewarded for his good or punished for his evil actions for eternity, while justice requires that he should experience the consequences of both. Would it be consistent with the perfect nature of the just God, to afflict one with eternal punishment for his guilt, leaving, at the same time, his good deeds unnoticed entirely, though performed with a view to the glory of God? Is it not, therefore scriptural as well as reasonable, that all men should be judged, after death, according to their good and evil works; and then, that through the intercession of one who stands as a mediator between God and man, those who have, through Christ, truly repented, shall be

admitted to enjoy infinite beautitude by the free bounty of the Father of the universe, to which they are not entitled by their own merit?

As to such phrases as *everlasting fire, or everlasting punishments*, found in the English version, I beg to refer my readers to the original Greek, in which the term αιωνιος, being derived from αιων, denotes, frequently, *duration* or *ages*; that is "durable fire," or, "durable punishments." Besides they may find the term "everlasting," when applied to an object *not divine*, implies long duration. Gen., xvii. 8: "And I will give unto thee, and to thy seed after thee, the land wherein thou art a stranger, all the land of Canaan, for an everlasting possession," &c., xlix. 26: "The blessings of thy father have prevailed above the blessings of my progenitors, unto the utmost bound of the everlasting hills," &c. Habakkuk, iii. 6: "He stood and measured the earth: He beheld and drove asunder the nations; and the everlasting mountains were scattered, and the perpetual hills did bow." *Vide* Note in the Second Appeal, p. 234.

CHAPTER III.

INQUIRY INTO THE DOCTRINE OF THE TRINITY.

SECTION I.

The Pentateuch and Psalms.

I NOW proceed to examine the doctrine of the Trinity, a term which, although it is frequently introducted both in orthodox writings and conversation, as the fundamental doctrine of Christianity, yet is not once found in any part of the sacred book.

The first position the Editor advances, in support of the deity of Jesus, (556), is, that the angel, who is said in Gen., xlviii. 16, to have redeemed Jacob, was Jesus himself, as he appears, "in the Scripture, distinct from the Father and able to redeem," and that the same redeeming being was the angel who spoke to Jacob in a dream, "I am the God of Bethel," (Gen. xxxi., 13:) and appeared to Moses "in a flame of fire, out of the midst of an unconsumed bush," (Exodus iii. 2,) and who came up from Gilgal to Bochim, and said, "I made you go up out of Egypt," &c. (Judges, ii. 1,) and called unto Abraham out of the heaven, and said, "Thou hast not withheld thy son, thine only son from me." Gen. xxii. 12,) whence the Editor concludes, that Christ being the redeeming angel, and that redeeming angel being the angel that spoke of himself as God in other instances, Christ is God. The Editor, although he fills more than two pages with this argument, yet never thinks of producing a single authority for his inference, that the angel who redeemed Jacob, was Christ, or for his identifying that angel with those angels whom the Editor considers as Jehovah, the God of Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob. The only reason he assigns for his first supposition is, that the angel appeared "distinct from the Father and able to redeem;" hence he was Christ who is represented as the redeemer of his people. Can the circumstance of the performance of similar acts, by two persons, identify one with the other? If so, we must, on the same ground, identify God with the human race, the Scriptures having ascribed to them both, such attributes as mercy, wrath, reward, and punishment; and we also, on the same principle, must maintain the identity of Jesus with all those that are said in the sacred books to have redeemed people at different times. Isaiah, lxiii. 9: "In all their affliction he was afflicted, and

the angel of his presence *saved* them; in his love and in his pity he *redeemed* them, and he bare them, and carried them all the days of old." Ruth, iv. 14: "And the woman said unto Naomi, Blessed be the Lord who hath not left thee this day without a *redeemer*,* גאל that his name may be famous in Israel." Neh. v. 8: "We, after our ability, have *redeemed* our brethren the Jews, who were sold unto the heathen."

Were we to admit, for a moment, that the angel who redeemed Jacob was indeed Jesus, it would necessarily follow, according to the Editor, that there was Christ-man-Jesus, God-Jesus, and Angel-Jesus; that is, that Christ is possessed of a three-fold nature, and to be esteemed as an obedient servant in his human capacity, as a faithful messenger in his angelical nature, and as an independent master and employer in his divine essence!

If it be alleged that the term angel is here only figuratively applied to Jesus, I shall reply, that we find nothing in the verse that can prevent the application of the term "angel" to the angel of God in its literal sense, no one, under such a circumstance, can be justified in adopting a metaphorical meaning; nevertheless we will, in conformity to the spirit of the sacred writings, maintain the opinion that God is the only true redeemer, and that his Christ, his angels, and his prophets, are redeemers in a secondary sense; that is they are the instruments in the hand of God in his works of redemption. If the scriptures do not scruple to call angels, like Jesus, "Gods," and "Sons of God," in a metaphorical sense, we should not wonder if we find the term "redeemer" applied to any angel of God, in an inferior sense.—Psalm, xcvii. 7: "Worship him, ye gods." Judges, xiii. 21, 22: "Then Manoah knew that he was an angel of the Lord, and Manoah said unto his wife, We shall surely die, because we have seen God."—Job, i. 6: "The sons of God came to present themselves before the Lord." As to his latter supposition, that the angel who redeemed Jacob was the same that appeared to him in a dream, and to Abraham and to others, on different occa-

* In the English Bible the term kinsman is here employed. This, however, is inaccurate, which will appear by referring to the context. It is thereby made evident that, before the birth of this son, Ruth and Naomi had Boaz and others as their kinsmen, and therefore the expression "who hath not left thee this day without a kinsman" cannot have reference to the child then born. Besides the synonymous term "restorer of thy life" used in verse 15th for the child, sufficiently determines the meaning.

sions, the Editor neither attempts to assign reasons nor does he endeavour to shew any authority for his assertion. He might, perhaps, lay stress on the definite article prefixed to the word "angel," in several of these instances, in the English version, (which he cannot do without total disregard to the idiom and use of the Hebrew language,) and thereby might attempt to substantiate the identity of one angel with the other. He would however, in this case, soon perceive his own error, if he should refer to Judges xiii. 16, where *the* angel (with the definite article in the common version) says to Manoah, 'Though thou detain me, I will not eat of thy bread; and if thou wilt offer a burnt-offering, thou must offer it unto the Lord," declaring himself unworthy of the worship due to God alone; or if he should turn to 2 Samuel, xxiv. 16, where the angel is represented as an obedient messenger of God, a destroying instrument in the hands of Jehovah. Many other instances might be cited of a similar nature. How, then, can Jesus if he be the being termed *the* angel, speak of himself, (as the Editor supposes,) as God in one instance, while in others he renounces his own deity, and even declares, that he destroys the lives of thousands by the command of a superior being?

Let us now examine whether or not the prophets as well as the angels of God, in the delivery of his message and his will, did not often speak in behalf of God, as if God himself had spoken I confine my notice to the prophets; for were I to point out any angel speaking in behalf of Jehovah, without distinction of persons, the Editor might attempt to deduce from this very circumstance, that that angel was God the Son.

Instances similar to the following abound in the Old Treatment. Isaiah x. 4—7: "Without *me* they shall bow down under the prisoners, and they shall fall under the slain. For all *this his* anger is not turned away, but his hand is stretched out still. O Assyrian, the rod of mine anger, and the staff in their hand is my indignation. I will send him against an hypocritical nation, and against the people of my wrath will I give him a charge, to take the spoil, and to take the prey, and to tread them down like the mire of the streets. Howbeit *he* meaneth not so, neither doth his heart think so; but it is in his heart to destroy and cut off nations not a few." Ch. xxix. 1—3: "Woe to Ariel, to Ariel, the city where David dwelt! add ye year to year; let them kill sacrifices; yet I will distress Ariel, and there shall be heaviness and sorrow: and it shall be unto me as Ariel. I

will camp against thee round about, and will lay seige against thee with a mount, and I will raise forts against thee." Micah, iv. 13: "Arise and thresh, O daughter of Zion, for I will make," &c. Ch. v. 1: "Now gather thyself in troops, O daughter of troops: he hath laid siege against us: they shall smite the judge of Israel with a rod upon the cheek. But thou, Bethlehem Ephratah, though thou be little among the thousands of Judah, yet out of thee shall he come forth unto me, that is to be ruler in Israel," &c. Now I presume, the Editor will not propose to identify those prophets with the Deity; yet he must admit that his argument, if it has any weight at all, must force us to submit to that monstrous conclusion.

In the course of this argument the Rev. Editor asserts, that "Christ also, in John, viii., declares himself to be precisely what Jehovah declares himself in Exodus, iii. 14: 'Thus shalt thou say unto the children of Israel, *I am* hath sent me unto you.' John viii. 24: 'If ye believe not that I am (*he* being supplied') ye shall die in your sins;' and ver. 58, 'Verily, verily, I say unto you, before Abraham was, I am.'" How is it possible that the Editor, a diligent student of the Bible for thirty or forty years, can have made such a palpable mistake as to assert, that the declaration of Jehovah, in Exod., iii., and that of Jesus, in John, viii., are *precisely the same*? It is but his zeal to support the doctrine of the Holy Trinity that can have prevented him from examining the phrases found in these two chapters. In Exod., God says, "Thus shalt thou say to the children of Israel, אשר אהיה אהיה* 'the being who *is* being' that sent me unto you;" a phrase in Hebrew, which implies Him who alone can be described as only mere being or existence, and which is translated in the Greek Septuagint, though not† very correctly, "εγω ει ι ο ων" "I am the being." But in the Gospel of John (viii. 24) the words are, "I am," (*he or Christ,*) and the original Greek "εαω ειμι" "I am," without the addition of "ο ων" "the being," as is found in the Septuagint. In the Hebrew translation of John, viii. 24, אני הוא or "I he," is found. So in ver. 58, we find only "εγω ειμι" or "I am." In John, viii. 24, the word

* אהיה is the future tense of היה to be, which literally implies "I shall be," and is used for "I am," that is, "I am and I shall be;" equivalent to the "eternal being." The Jews consequently count this term among the names of God, as is evident from its being used in agreement with a verb in the third person, as in the above-cited verse.

† I say not very correctly, because we find in the Septuagint, the term אהיה, rendered ο ωι, or the being, in one instance, and εαω ειμι in lieu of the same term אהיה in the other.

"χριστος' 'is of course supplied in comparing with Matt., xxiv. 5, "I am Christ," and with John, iv. 25, 26. I would then ask, Is אהיה אשר אהיה. or "the being who *is* being," a phrase precisely the same with "εγω ειμι or "I am"? If so, it must require a mode of argument to prove it, equally beyond my comprehension with the mysterious doctrine of the Trinity, which it is brought to support.

From the circumstance of Jesus' having announced "before Abraham was I am" (v. 58.) the Editor concludes that "the Jews at once understood him to declare himself God and took up stones to stone him: nor did Jesus hint that they had mistaken him;" a silence which the Editor thinks amounts to the tacit acknowledgment by Jesus of his deity. But from the context of verse the 58th, it appears clearly that the indignation of the Jews arose from the idea that Jesus declared himself not merely the contemporary of Abraham, but even gave out that before Abraham, he was; and that it was for this they attempted to stone him. It is not the only instance in which Jesus left the Jews to labour under a misconception of his meaning, for we find the same to have been the case in several other instances. Thus: John, ii. 19 and 21, "Jesus answered and said unto them: destroy this temple and in three days I will raise it up. Then said the Jews: Forty and six years was this temple in building and wilt thou rear it up in three days? But he spake of the temple of his body." John, vi. 53 and 66, viii. 26—27. "I have many things to say and to judge of you, but he that sent me is true; and I speak to the world those things which I have heard of him: they understood not that he spake to them of the Father."

The Editor mentions (559) that "Job also testifies that the redeemer is God;" and quotes Job, xix. 25—26, "For I know that my redeemer liveth, and that he shall stand at the latter day upon the earth. And though after my skin worms destroy this body, yet in my flesh shall I see God." I fully coincide with the Editor in this declaration: not Job alone but all the other writers of the sacred books testify that the true redeemer is God; and they all expected him to cast his mercy upon them both at the last moment of their life, and at the last period of the world. I am at a loss to know what expression in the passage in question has induced the Editor to refer to the other texts cited, "would we know whether by God, Job means some inferior deity, neither creature nor creator;" for there can be no doubt that the term redeemer is frequently in the sacred writings applied in its strict sense to the Most High God; and that the phrases,

"He shall stand at last," and "I shall see God," which are also found in the above passage, are often spoken of the Supreme Being, without implying any necessity of understanding them as applicable to an inferior deity, either creature or creator. Exodus, xxxiv. 5: "And the Lord descended in the cloud, and stood with him there," &c., Zech., xiv. 3, 4: "Then shall the Lord go forth and fight against those nations, as when he fought in the day of battle. And his feet will stand in that day upon the Mount of Olives, which is before Jerusalem" Numb., xiv. 14 "That thou art seen face to face." Matt., v. 8: "Blessed are the pure in heart, for they shall see God." The phrase, "at the latter day," found in ver. 25, is incorrectly rendered in the English version as the translation of the Hebrew אַחֲרוֹן, as has been already noticed in page 37. [Note.]

The Editor refers his readers to Psalm, ii. last verse, "Kiss the son, lest he be angry, and ye perish from the way, when his wrath is kindled but a little. Blessed are they who trust in him,"—leaving the context carefully out of sight. I therefore deem it proper to cite the preceding verses here, that the public may judge whether the verse referred to by the Editor be directly applicable to Jesus or to David. David thus relates the circumstance of the hostile disposition of the heathen kings against God and against his anointed David himself, in verses 1-3, and the despite of God at their vain boast, in verses 4—6. He then mentions, in verses 7—9, how God afforded him consolation: "I will declare the decree: The Lord hath said unto *me*, thou art my son; THIS DAY HAVE I BEGOTTEN THEE. Ask of me, and I shall give thee the heathen for thine inheritance, and the utmost parts of the earth for thy possession. Thou shalt *break* them with a *rod of iron*; thou shalt *dash them in pieces* like a potter's vessel. David lastly mentions what God recommended those heathen kings to do for their safety, verses 10—12: "Beware now, therefore, O ye kings; be instructed, ye judges of the earth! Serve the Lord with fear, and rejoice with trembling. Kiss the son, lest he be angry," &c. Here Jehovah, in verse 7, calls David, "*My son, this day have I begotten thee*," corresponding with Psalm, lxxxix. 27, "Also, I will make him (David) my first-born, higher than the kings of the earth." I must again say, that nothing except the violent force of early-acquired prejudice can lead any one to the direct application of the term "son" (found again in verse 12 of the same Psalm, relating to the same subject) to another than David. God again assures David,

in verses 8. 9. that he would have the heathen for his possession, and that he would break the heathens and dash them to pieces. So we find in 1 Chron. xiv. 8: "When the Philistines heard that David was* anointed king over all Israel, all the Philistines went up to seek David and David heard of it; and went out against them" Ver. 16, 17: "David therefore did as God commanded him: and they smote the host of the Philistines from Gibeon even to Gazer. And the fame of David went out into *all lands*; and the Lord brought the *fear of him upon all nations*." And ch. xviii. 1—8: "Now after this it came to pass, that David smote the Philistines, and subdued them, and took Gath and her towns out of the hand of the Philistines. And he smote Moab; and the Moabites became David's servants, and brought gifts. And David smote Hadarezer, king of Zobah, unto Hamath, as he went to establish his dominion by the Euphrates. And David took from him a thousand chariots, and seven thousand horsemen, and twenty thousand footmen: David also houghed all the chariot horses, but received of them an hundred chariots. And when the Syrians of Damascus came to help Hadarezer, king of Zobah, David slew of the Syrians two-and-twenty thousand men. Then David put garrisons in Syria-damascus, and the Syrians became David's servants, and brought gifts. Thus the Lord preserved David *whithersoever* he went. And David took the shields of gold that were on the servants of Hadarezer, and brought them to Jerusalem. Likewise from Tibhath, and from Chun, cities of Hadarezer, brought David very much brass, wherewith Solomon made the brazen sea, and the pillars, and the vessels of brass." And also ch. xx. 2, 3: "And David took the crown of their king from off his head, and found it to weigh a talent of gold; and there were precious stones in it; and it was set upon David's head: and he brought also exceeding much spoil out of the city. And he brought out the people that were in it, and *cut them with saws, and with harrows of iron, and with axes*. Even so dealt David with all the cities of the childern of Ammon. And David and all the people returned to Jerusalem." Do not such denunciations as "Thou shalt break them with a *rod of iron*," "Thou shalt dash them in pieces," found in ver. 9 of the above Psalm correspond with 1 Chron. xx., "David smote the Philistines;" "he smote Moab;" "David smote Hadarezer;" "David slew of the Syrians two and twenty thousand

* *Vide* Psalm ii. 2. "against his anointed."

men; "David took the crown of their king from off his head;" "and cut them" (the citizens) "with saws, and with harrows of iron"? Are not these directly suitable to the history of David the conqueror, called by God, his son, rather than to the office and nature of the meek and lowly Jesus, who, though most exalted among the sons of God, was himself the victim of the rage of unbelievers? Even upon the Trinitarian system, do not such sentences as "*Ask* I shall give thee the heathen for an inheritance," corresponding with the passages in *Chronicles*, "The Lord brought the fear of him" (David) "*upon all nations*," "Thus the Lord preserved David whithersoever he went," admit of better application to David, whose glory depended from time to time upon his supplications to God, than to Jesus, who, as God himself, according to the Editor, was possessed of infinite power and glory from eternity, and needed not to ask of another? Does not such address to the heathen kings as "Kiss the son, lest he be angry," &c., agree with the circumstances mentioned in 1 Chron., xviii. xx: "The Moabites became David's servants, and brought gifts;" "the Syrians became David's servants, and brought gifts;" "and he brought out the people—and cut them with saws, and with harrows of iron, and with axes. Even so dealt David with all the cities of the children of Ammon?"

The opponents whom David broke "with a rod of iron," were his political enemies; consequently the assertion of the Editor, that "the destruction to spiritual enemies is no where in scripture described as arising from the wrath of a mere creature," has no applicability to the subject in question. As to his assertion, "Prophets denounced on men the wrath of God, and pronounced on them a curse in his name," I only refer the Rev. Editor to 2 Kings, v. 26, 27, in which Elisha is said, when displeased at the conduct of his servant, to have miraculously punished him with leprosy, without pronouncing on him verbally any curse in the name of God; and also to Exod., xxiii. 21, wherein he will find that the angels of God, if provoked, have the power of keeping away pardon from men.

It may, however, be fairly concluded from the authority and acts of Jesus himself, that both the angel and the prophets of God, in performing miracles, either of punishment or reward, according as they were disposed, applied always to God for power, though they sometimes omitted to express such applications verbally, John, xi. 41, 42: "And Jesus (in raising Lazarus from the dead) "lifted up

his eyes and said, Father, I thank thee that thou hast heard me; and I knew that thou hearest me *always*."

From the words, "who trust in him," found in the second Psalm, the Editor attempts to prove the deity of the Son on the supposition that the phrase "to trust in" is exclusively applicable to God, and corroborates his opinion by Jer., xvii. 5, forgetting that this term, though it is often used with reference to God, yet is applied sometimes to created beings. Prov., xxxi. 11: "The heart of her husband doth safely trust in her, so that he shall have no need of spoil." Isaiah, xiv. 32: "The Lord hath founded Zion, and the poor of his people shall trust in it." As to Jer., xvii. 5, quoted by the Editor, "Thus saith Jehovah, Cursed be he that trusteth in man, and maketh flesh his arm, and whose heart departeth from Jehovah," it, of course, implies that he who trusts in man, independently of God, should be cursed, as appears from the last sentence of the same verse, "whose heart departeth from Jehovah"

The Editor quotes Psalm, xxiv. 1, 2: "The earth is Jehovah's and the fulness thereof, the world, and they that dwell therein; for he hath founded it upon the sea, and established it upon the floods," and compares it with John, i. 3, "All things were made by him, (the Word,) and without him was not any thing made which was made. The inference which he draws from this comparison is, that "In creating power, Christ is equal to Jehovah." Were we to overlook the mistranslation of this verse* in the English version, (which it is almost impossible not to notice,) and to understand the passages as it stands in the orthodox translation, we should esteem Jesus as the cause of all created things. But we should be in this case naturally inclined to ascertain whether Jesus was an efficient or an instrumental cause

* [All things were done by him.] "All things were made by him and without him was not any thing made that was made." Newcome: who explains it of the creation of the visible material world by Christ, as the agent and instrument of God. See his notes on verses 3 and 10. But this is a sense which the word ἐλέχνετο will not admit. τινομαι occurs upwards of seven hundred times in the New Testament, but never in the sense of create. It signifies in this gospel, where it occurs fifty-three times, to be, to come, to become, to come to pass; also, to be done or transacted, Chapter xv. 7; xix. 36. It has the latter sense, Matt., v. 18; vi, 8; xxi, 42; xxvi, 6. "All things in the Christian dispensation were done by Christ" i, e, by his authority, and according to his direction; and in the ministry committed to his apostles, nothing has been done without his warrant. See John xv, 4, 5: "Without me ye can do nothing," Compare verses, 7, 10, 16; John, xvii, 8; Col., i. 16, 17: Cape, ibid, (Improved Version.)

of those things; since the preposition "by," found in the verse, signifies either a principal agent of an action, or an instrument therein. We find Heb., 1. 2, (as it stands in the English version,) deciding the question beyond a doubt; "(God hath in these last days spoken unto us by his Son, whom he hath appointed heir of all things, *by whom* also *he made the worlds*." Eph., iii. 9: "Who (God) created all things by Jesus Christ' Here all the worlds are represented as made by Jesus as an instrument in the hands of God. It is hoped that after reflecting upon this decision, by the author of these epistles, the Editor may, perhaps, retract his assertion, that "in creating power, Christ is equal to Jehovah", and be of opinion that the world was made by the will of one being. Could not Jehovah, to whom the Editor ascribes omnipotence, create this world independently of another omnipotent being, equal to him "in creating power"? If not, the world must be, in this case, the joint production of Jehovah and Christ, as well as of the Holy Ghost, (whom the Editor here omits to notice,) and each of them must depend upon the others in creation, like joint managers of a concern. Can the Editor point out any set of men, or any nation professing a grosser polytheism than this? The only difference that he can shew between his notion and that of avowed polytheists, must consist only in respect of the increase or decrease of the supposed number of Creators—a distinction which will amount to nothing intrinsic. I must now leave the subject to the sound judgment of my reader.

The Editor further proceeds, saying, "With reference to Christ, Paul adds (1 Cor., x. 25, 26,) "Whatsoever is sold in the shambles, *that* eat: For the earth is the Lord's and the fulness thereof." He then concludes, "If this Psalm, (xxiv. 1) then, speak of Jehovah the Father, the same absolute dominion over the earth is here ascribed to the Son as to the Father; if the Son, he is there termed Jehovah,"—St. Paul here justifies the eating of whatever is sold in the shambles, referring to Psalm xxiv. 1, as his reason for such justification, without the most distant allusion to Jesus. I am, therefore, at a loss to discover the ground upon which the Editor founded his foregoing conclusion. For further illustration I quote the paraphrase by a most eminent personage on the above verses of Corinthians: "Eat whatever is sold in the shambles, without any inquiry or scruple, whether it had been offered to any idol or no. For the earth and all therein are the good creatures of the true God, given by him to men for their

use."—(Locke, Vol. viii.) If the Editor still insists, in defiance of St. Paul's reference, of common sense, and of the above paraphrase, that in 1 Cor., x. 26, St. Paul alludes to Jesus, I should take upon myself to refer him to Hebrews, i. 2, (the Son) "whom he (God) hath *appointed heir of all things*"; and the John, iii. 35, "The Father loveth the Son, and *hath given all things* into his hand." These I hope will convince him that all the power and possession of the Son, in heaven and on earth, are derived from the gift of the Father of the universe.

The Editor quotes 1 Cor., x. 22: "Do we provoke the Lord to jealousy? Are we stronger than he?" whence he infers that "the Lord then is capable of being provoked by the worship of idols equally with God." Granting that St. Paul means Jesus by the term "Lord," and by the pronoun "he," in verse the 22nd, (a position which is unsupported by proof,) we still find nothing in the passage elevating Jesus to equality with his Father. The apostle may, according to the Editor's interpretation, be supposed to have prohibited Christians from provoking Christ to jealousy, by partaking of the cup and table of devils, instead of those of Christ, of which their Master required them to partake, as appears from the immediately preceding verse—"Ye cannot drink the cup of the Lord, and the cup of devils. Ye cannot be partakers of the Lord's table, and of the table of devils." Is it not natural that Jesus, who enjoined the apostles to observe the Lord's Supper, would be provoked to jealousy by his followers partaking both of his table, and of the sacrifice offered to idols, without his thereby equalizing himself with God? I find that the prophets of God are declared in more pointed terms to have been jealous of the dishonor manifested to God; but no one has ever felt disposed to ascribe to them equality with his Divine Majesty. 1 Kings, xix. 10: "And he said, I have been very jealous for the Lord God of hosts; for the children of Israel have forsaken thy covenant, and thrown down thy altars," &c.

I will repeat *verbatim* the Editor's quotation of Psalm, xxiv. 8, and Eph., iv. 8, and his inference of the Deity of Jesus from the comparison of the one with the other, that my reader may perceive how violently prejudice can operate upon the human mind. He says (561) that "in verse 8th one is about to enter heaven as the king of glory; who is called 'Jehovah,' mighty in battle." In Eph., iv. "Jesus *elsewhere* styled the Lord of glory, ascends, having led

captivity captive, which implies battle and victory.[g] Here also the son is either described as equal in might to Jehovah, or as Jehovah himself." There are not in verse eighth nor in the whole Psalm, xxiv. such phrases as "captivity captive" or "ascend on high" as found in Eph., iv. 8; nor are there, in the whole Chapter iv. of Ephesians, the terms "king of glory,' or even "Lord of glory," or "mighty in battle," as we find stated in the above Psalm. The Psalm commences by a declaration of God's sovereignty over the earth—proceeds to state the virtues that must belong to those who seek his presence and desire his blessing—and concludes with an exhortation to Jerusalem to receive him as the king of glory—the Lord of Hosts. But the subject of the above verse of the Epistle to the Ephesians is Jesus, who ascended on high to give divine gifts to men, after he had *descended first into the middle of the grave*, as is evident from the immediately following verse: "Now that he ascended, what is it, but that he also *descended* first *into the lower parts of the earth*," and so on;—a descent which cannot be ascribed to God. Verse the 8th of iv. Eph. is an obvious reference to Psalm, lxviii. 18, a fact which is acknowledged even by Mr. Brown and Mr. Jones, and many other Trinitarian writers: "Thou hast ascended on high, thou hast led captivity captive, thou hast received gifts for men; yea, for the rebellious also, that the Lord God might dwell among them." But the Editor omits here to compare the passage in Ephes. with the last mentioned Psalm, though both contain almost the same words that he dwells upon; perhaps in consideration of the latter phrases of the Psalm being inconsistent with his object. "Thou *hast received gifts* for men that *the Lord God might dwell among them*," which clearly shows the subordination of the son to his heavenly father. In further explanation I repeat the note of Mr. Locke on verses 9 and 11 of Ephesians in his paraphrase of this Epistle, (p. 477.) Note on verses 9, 10: "St. Paul's argumentation, in these two verses is skillfully adapted to the main design of his Epistle. The converted gentiles were attacked by the unconverted Jews, who were declared enemies to the thoughts of a Messiah that died. St. Paul, to ener[illegible]e that objection of theirs, proves by the passage out of the P[illegible]s, v. 8, that he must die and be buried. Besides the unbelieving [illegible]ws,

[g] This term "to lead captivity captive" is not synonymous to "mighty in battle" nor equivalent in application. For one may be mighty in battle without leading captives; so one may lead captive by miraculous or artful means without being mighty in battle.

several of them, that were converted to the Gospel, or at least professed to be so, attacked the gentile converts, on another ground, persuading them, that they could not be admitted to be the people of God under the kingdom of the Messiah, nor receive any advantage by him, unless they were circumcised and put themselves, wholly under the Jewish constitution. He had said a great deal, in the three first chapters, to free them from this perplexity, but yet takes occasion here to offer them a new argument, by telling them, that Christ, the same Jesus that died, and was laid in his grave, was exalted to the right hand of God, above all the heavens, in the highest state of dignity and power, that, he himself being filled with the fulness of God, believers, who were all his members, might receive immediately from him, their head, a fulness of gifts and graces, upon no other terms but barely as they were his members."

After having compared Psalm, xxxvi. 6, "O Jehovah, thou preservest man and beast," with Col., i. 17, "By him (by Jesus) all things consist," and with Hebrews, i. 3, "He upholds all things by the word of his power," the Editor thus concludes, "The Son, then, is either equal to Jehovah in preserving power, or Jehovah himself." In the first place, in some ancient manuscripts, instead of "by him all things consist," there is the phrase "all things are united in him," which of course bears no comparison with the above Psalm, "O Jehovah, thou preservest man and beast." In the second place, he may perceive from the context, that by the term "all things," the apostle could have meant only the things concerning the Christain dispensation: for we find, in the verse immediately following, Jesus is declared to be "the head of the body, the church," and in the preceding verse,* "the things" are enumerated as orders and ranks in the religious and the moral world, and not natural substances. In the third place, admiting even the interpreta-

* "That the apostle does not here intend the creation of natural substances, is evident; for 1st, he does not say, that by him were created heaven and earth, but things in heaven and things on earth; 2ndly, He does not, in descending into detail, specify things themselves, viz. celestial and terrestrial substances, but merely states of things, viz., thrones, dominions, &c., which are only ranks and orders of beings in the rational and moral world; 3rdly, It is plain, from comparing ver. 15 and ver. 18, that Christ is called the first-born of the whole creation because he is the first who was raised from the dead to an immortal life; 4thly, The creation of natural objects, the heaven, the earth, and sea, and all things therein, when they are plainly and unequivocally mentioned, is uniformly and invariably ascribed to the Father, both in the Old Testament and the New. Hence, it follows, that the creation, which the Apostle here ascribes to Christ,

tion of the Editor, that all natural substances consist by Jesus, we cannot help yielding conviction to the repeated avowal of Jesus, manifesting that the support of all things, or the things of the new dispensation by Jesus, is entirely owing to the power vested in him by the Father of all things, without which he is totally unable to support them. John, xvii. 2: "Thou hast *given him*" (the Son) "power over all flesh." Ch. v. 30: "I *can* of mine own self *do nothing*," &c., As to the term "all things," τα παντα found in Heb., i. 3, just quoted by the Editor, it signifies also, all the things belonging to the Christian dispensation, as I observed before. But if the Editor again insists upon his mode of interpretation, as meaning all natural objects by that term, he, by referring to John, xiv. 24, "The *word* which ye hear *is not mine but the Father's*" and Matt., xxviii. 18, "*All power is given unto me* in heaven and on earth," must be convinced that the word of power, by which Jesus upholds or rules all things, is, in fact, belonging to the Father.

In his attempt to prove the deity of Jesus, the Editor repeats (p. 561) Psalm, xlv. 6, as quoted in Heb., i. 8, "Thy throne, O *Jehovah*, is forever and ever." My reader may observe, that to apply to Jesus the term "Jehovah," the peculiar name of God, the Editor perverts the verse in question by placing the word "Jehovah" instead of "God," a term which is in the Scriptures, commonly used, not only for the Creator, but for other superior existences. He at the same time, neglects entirely the original Psalm in Hebrew אֱלֹהִים, "Thy throne, O God." and also the original Epistle to Hebrews, in Greek θεος "The throne of thee, O God." I now beg to ask the Editor to let me know his authority for this unaccountable change. I should for my own part, be indeed very sorry and ashamed of my opinions if I found myself to make perversions of scriptural passages, and to set aside the suggestions of common sense, to support the doctrines that I may have been persuaded to profess. It is

---

expresses that great change which was introduced into the moral world and particularly into the relative situation of Jews and Gentiles, by the dispensation of the gospel. This is often called creation, or the new creation, and is usually ascribed to Jesus Christ, who was the great prophet and messenger of the new covenant. See Eph., i. 10, ii, 10—15, iii. 9, iv, 24; Col., iii. 10; 2 Cor., v. 17. This great change the apostle here describes under the symbol of a revolution, introduced by Christ amongst certain ranks and orders of beings, by whom, according to the Jewish demonology, borrowed from the oriental philosophy, the affairs of states and individuals were superintended and governed. See Mr. Lindsey's Sequel, page 477, and Wetstien in loc." Improved Version.

again worth observing, that the Editor quotes the above passage of Psalm, xlv., omitting entirely to notice my remarks on it in the Second Appeal. I am therefore, induced to repeat them, in the hope that he may reply to them, and adopt a regular mode of argumentation. After stating that Moses was also called God in the Scriptures, I thus proceed: "On what principle, then, can any stress be laid in defence of the deity of the Son, in the prophetic expression quoted in Hebrews from Psalm xlv. 6. 'Thy throne, O God, is for ever and ever'; especially when we find, in the very next verse, words that declare his subordinate nature, 'Thou lovest righteousness and hatest wickedness, therefore, God, *thy God*, hath anointed thee with the oil of gladness above *thy fellows*'"? (p. 138.) "But it deserves particularly to be noticed, in this instance, that the Messiah, in whatever sense, he is declared God, is, in the very same sense, described in verse 7, ('God thy God,') as having a God *superior to him*, and by whom he was appointed to the office of Messiah." (P. 243.)

In the third place, no scripturalist ever hesitated to apply Psalm xlv. directly to Solomon, after his marriage with the daughter of Pharoah, as is evident from the context: "My heart is inditing a good matter: I speak of the things which I have made touching the king: my tongue *is* the pen of a ready writer. Thou art fairer than the children of men: grace is poured into thy lips: therefore God hath blessed thee for ever. Thy throne, O God, *is* for ever and ever: the sceptre of thy kingdom *is* a right sceptre. Thou lovest righteousness, and hatest wickedness: therefore God, thy God hath anointed thee with the oil of gladness above thy fellows. Kings' daughters *were* among the honourable women: upon thy right hand did stand the queen in gold of Ophir. Hearken, O daughter, and consider and incline thine ear; forget also thine own people, and thy father's house: so shall the king greatly desire thy beauty: for he *is* thy Lord, and worship thou him. Instead of thy fathers shall be thy children, whom thou mayest make princes in all the earth." If the application of the word "God" in an accommodated sense, entitle Jesus to deity how much more properly should the direct application of the same word, "God" to Solomon, according to the Editor, exalt him to a participation in the divine nature.

The Editor afterwards quotes, in defence of the deity of Jesus, Psalm, cii. 25—27, referred to by the author of the Epistle to the Hebrews, i. 10—12, "Thou, Lord, in the beginning hast laid the

foundation of the earth, and the heavens are the works of thy hand. They shall perish; but thou remainest: and they all shall wax old as doth a garment: and as a vesture shalt thou fold them up, and they shall be changed: but thou art the same, and thy years shall not fail." The construction here admits of two interpretations: one is that verses 10—12, are, in continuation of verses 8, 9, addressed to the Son by God, supposed by the Editor: the other is, that the author of the Epistle to Hebrews invokes his Divine Majesty by quoting Psalm, cii. 25—27, after he has, in the preceding verse, introduced the name of God, as anointing the Son above his fellows to shew the continual duration of the honour bestowed on the Son, as flowing from the unchangeable and preserving power of the bestower of that honour. To ascertain which of these two intepretations the apostle had in view, let us now refer to the context. One's exaltation above his fellows by another, on account of his merit, as stated in the preceding verse (9) is quite inconsistent with the immutable character mentioned in verses 10—12, and, therefore, these two opposite qualities can by no means be ascribed to the same being. Again in the following verse, (13), the apostle, to prove the superiority of the Son over angels, asks, "To which of the angels said he at any time, Sit on my right hand until I make thine enemies thy footstool?" Here common sense dictates, that if such expressions as "Thou, Lord, in the beginning hast laid the foundation of the earth," &c.; "As a vesture shalt thou fold them up;" and "Thou art the same, and thy years shall not fail," had been meant by the apostle as applicable to Jesus, he would not, in setting forth the dignity of the Son, have added the words, "Sit on my right hand until I make thine enemies thy footstool"; which imply a much inferior nature to that attributed in the preceding passage, and which, indeed, may be parallelled by other expressions found in Scripture, applied to *mere human* beings. Deut., xxxii. 10: "He (Jehovah) kept him as the *apple of his eye*." Isaiah, xlix. 16: "Behold, I have graven thee upon *the palms of my hands*." Psalm, xlvii. 3: "He (Jehovah) shall subdue the people under *us*, and the nations under *our* feet." In describing the superior courage and the strength of a man who is reported to have overpowered a lion, and also a dog, no one, endued with common sense, would after stating the former fact, adduce the latter as an additional proof of courage and strength, as it is evident that to kill a dog is a feat by no means of so wonderful a nature as that of overcoming a lion. My reader may recollect Matt., xxii. 45:

"If David then call him (the Messiah) Lord, how is he his son?" which tells us that Jesus disproves the assertion of the Messiah being the son of David, on the ground that no father could consistently call his son "Lord," much less could he apply to his son the term "My Lord." Were we to admit the first interpretation, upheld by the Editor, and to consider the passage, "Thou, Lord, in the beginning, &c., as a part of the address of Jehovah to Jesus, we must, in conformity to the argument used by Jesus himself, in Matt., xxii. 45, relinquish the commonly-received doctrine, that Jesus is the Son of God, and actually admit his superiorty to the Father of the universe, who, according to the Editor, addresses him as "Lord" in Heb., i. 10. Either, therefore, the Editor must abandon the opinion that God the Father addresses Jesus as Lord, in the passage referred to, or he must cease to consider him as the "Son of God."

The Editor again uses the word Jehovah in verse 10, and reads, "Thou, Jehovah, in the beginning," &c., instead of "Thou, Lord, in the beginning," &c., without assigning any reason for his deviating from the English version, as well as the Hebrew and Greek originals. For in the original Hebrew there is no "Jehovah" mentioned in Psalm, cii. 25, and, consequently, in the Greek passage, Heb., i. 10, which is a quotation of the same verse of the Psalm, the term κυριε cannot be supposed to be intended as a translation of the word Jehovah. So in the English version the verse stands thus, "Thou, *Lord*, in the beginning," &c. I shall, however, feel obliged to the Rev. Editor, if he can point out to me any authority for his substitution of the word "Jehovah" for Lord, in the verse in question.

With a view to weaken the strength of the evidence found in 1 Cor., xv. 24, as to the changeable nature of Christ, the Editor says, (p. 562) "His original throne as Jehovah God, is for ever and ever; his mediatorial throne remains for a season, and ceases." I have already noticed, in pages 139 and 234 of the Second Appeal, and in the foregoing chapter of this work, that the term *for ever*, or similar terms, when used for a creature, or a begotten son, signify, in scriptural idiom, long duration of time. My reader, therefore, by referring to those instances, will be convinced that neither Solomon, to whom Psalm, cii. 25, is directly applied, nor Jesus, to whom the apostle applies the said verse in the above Psalm, in an accommodated sense, can be supposed to be endued with a throne or kingdom

that never will cease;—a question which St. Paul decides in the most plain and positive terms, in 1 Cor. xv. 24, 25: "Then cometh the end, when he shall have *delivered up the kingdom* to God, even the Father; when he shall have laid down all rule and authority and power. For he must reign till he hath put all enemies under his feet." (Verse 28:) "And when all things shall be subdued unto him, then shall the *Son also himself* be subject unto him that put all things under him, that God may be all in all." Here the apostle declares, that Jesus will in the end *deliver up his kingdom to God the Father*, and not to God composed (as the Editor maintains) of the Father, the Son, and the Holy Ghost; and that the Son himself, unlimited to any particular capacity, whether mediatorial, human, or divine, shall be subject to the Father, that God alone may be all in all. Is there in this passage, or in any other part of the Scriptures, any authority for saying that the Son's mediatorial throne *alone* shall be delivered up to the Father? On the contrary, neither he nor any one, can in a mediatorial capacity exercise a kingdom; but Jesus, as the king of our faith, the anointed with the oil of gladness above his fellows, has a kingdom and throne, and that kingdom only can he deliver up in the end of the world, that God may be all in all. Besides the above verse (28) asserts, that he, as the *Son*, the highest title that Jesus is honoured with, will be subject to him who has exalted him above all creatures. No one, besides, unbiassed by early prejudice, can ever venture to pronounce such an opinion as that a being can lose his kingdom in any capacity whatsoever, and yet be unchangeable.

As some orthodox divines had attempted to prove the deity of Jesus from the circumstance of the term "shepherd" being applied to God, in Psalm, xxiii. 1, and to Jesus, in John, x. 16, I pointed out (p. 249 of the Second Appeal), that the same term "shepherd" is used for Moses, (in Isaiah, lxiii. 11. "With the shepherd of his flock,") and for the leaders of Israel, (Jer., xxiii 4, "I will set up shepherds over them,") yet that none of those persons is supposed to have been united with God.

The Rev. Editor, although he acknowledged the accuracy of my above assertion, yet tries to draw from it an argument against me by means of one or two strange questions. One is, (p. 562,) "But did he" (the author) "never read of a chief shepherd, who, when he shall appear, will give the under-shepherds a crown of

glory?" The other is, "But was our author ignorant that David was also one of Christ's fold, and Moses, and Abraham?" In answer to which, I must confess that I am ignorant of David, Moses, and Abraham, having been of Christ's fold: and although Jesus is styled "a chief shepherd," yet such avowal of his superiority above other messengers of the Deity neither places him on a level with Jehovah, nor does it prove his unity with the Most High God. Can a chief among the generals of a king be ever supposed equal to, or identified with, the king, his employer? With respect to the argument founded on referring to Jesus Christ, Ezek., xxxiv. 23, "I will set one shepherd, even my servant David," I observed in my Second Appeal, (p. 249,) that even in this case, "they must still attribute his shepherdship over his flock to divine commission, and must relinquish the idea of unity between God the employer, and the Messiah his servant," to which the Editor makes reply, "We must relinquish a unity of nature between the Divine Father and the Messiah whom he sent, just as much as we do between Cyaxares and Cyrus, employed to lead his armies, between Vespasian and Titus, between George the Third and his son, now George the Fourth." In this passage, it must be confessed that we have something like a clear definition or exposition of the nature of the Trinity, in which the Editor professes his belief;—that is, he conceives the God-head to constitute a genus like angel, man, fowl, fish, &c., God the Son being of the same nature with God the Father, just as the man George the Third is of the same nature with the man George the Fourth, though of a separate will, inclination, and passion, and distinct existence—a conception which is certainly compatible with an idea of unity of nature between the Father and the Son, but which is entirely inconsistent with that of co-evality between them; and implies, that, as the difference of existence, &c., between man and man is the origin of the plurality of mankind, so the difference of existence, &c., between God and God, must cause plurality in the Godhead. Can there be any polytheistical creed more clear and more gross than this? Yet the Editor will take it amiss if charged with Polytheism. It is worth observing, that the orthodox, so far from establishing the unity of the Messiah with God by means of the above passage, "I will set one shepherd over them, even my *servant David*," can at most but prove unity between the Messiah and God's *servant David*.

In the course of this argument, the Editor says, that "he had adduced many other passages in which the Son is called Jehovah." I wonder at this assertion. I find hitherto only two places in which he applies the word Jehovah to Jesus, "Thy throne, O God!" &c., "And thou Lord, in the beginning" &c. The Editor takes upon himself to use the term Jehovah instead of "God" in the former, and instead of "Lord" in the latter instance, as before noticed, and now he gives out his own perversion of those texts as authority!

Mr. Jones having attempted to deduce the deity of Jesus by a comparison of Ephes., iv. 18, with Psalm, lxviii. 18, "Thou hast ascended on high, thou hast led captivity captive: thou hast received gifts of men; yea, for the rebellious also, that the Lord God might dwell among them,"—I observed, (p. 256, Second Appeal,) that, "from a view of the whole verse, the sense must, according to this mode of reasoning, be as follows:—The person who ascended on high, and who *received* gifts for men, that the Lord God might dwell among them, is the Lord God,—an interpretation, which, as implying that the Lord God ascended, and received gifts from a being of course superior to himself, in order that he might dwell among men, is equally absurd and unscriptural." The Editor entirely omits to notice the foregoing observation, and only refers to the context, inferring thence that different persons of the Godhead are addressed in the course of the Psalm. (P. 564.) "The Psalm," he observes, (lxviii.) "commences with an address to God in the third person. At verse 7th he is addressed in the second person: the second person is retained till verse 11th, and is resumed again in this, the 18th verse. If one person be not addressed from the beginning, therefore, it is certain that he who ascended on high, indentified by Paul as Christ, is God, who went forth before the people through the wilderness." How is it possible, that the Editor, a diligent student of the Bible for thirty or forty years, should not know that, in addressing God, the third person and also the second are constantly used in immediate sequence, and that this variation is considered a rhetorical trope in Hebrew and Arabic, as well as in almost all the Asiatic languages, from being supposed to convey notions of the omnipresence and pervading influence of the Deity? To prove this assertion, I could quote a great many instances, even from the single book of Psalms, such as Psalm, iii. 3, 5, &c and in a single ch. 2 Samuel, xxii. 3, 49, in which God is addressed both in the second and third persons; but as the Editor

might perhaps, allege in those cases, though in defiance both of the idiom of the Hebrew and of common sense, that in all these instances David in spirit meant the first and the second persons of the Godhead by the variety of persons, I shall quote the translation of some lines of the Qoran, by Sale, and of a Jewish prayer, in which the same variety of persons is used, and where it cannot be imagined that different persons of the Godhead are meant to be therein addressed. Alqoran, ch. 1.: "Praise be *to God the Lord* of all creatures, the most merciful, the King of the day of judgment. *Thee* do we worship, and of thee do we beg assistance. Direct us in the right way, in the way of those to whom thou hast been gracious; not of those against whom thou art incensed, not of those who go astray." Can Mohammad here be supposed to have alluded in spirit to the first and second persons of God, or has he not rather used those phrases according to the common practice of the language? The following lines are from a Jewish book of prayers, written in Hebrew, and translated into English.* "*Sabbath morning service.* 'Therefore, all whom God hath formed, shall glorify and bless him; they shall ascribe praise, honour, and glory, unto the King who hath formed all things; and who, through his holiness, causeth his people Israel inherit rest on the holy Sabbath. *Thy* name, O Lord our God! shall be sanctified.'" "*Morning service.* 'His words also are living, permanent, faithful, and desirable for ever, even unto all ages; as well those which he hath spoken concerning our ancestors, as those concerning us, our children, our generations, and the generations of the seed of Israel, *thy* servants, both the first and the last.'" A thousand similar instances might be adduced.

In the Qoran, it is further remarkable that the same change of person is adopted when God is represented as speaking of himself. *Alqoran*, ii. 5: "Set not up, therefore, any equals unto *God* against your own knowledge. If ye be in doubt concerning that revelation, which *we* have sent down unto our servant, produce a chapter like unto it, and call upon your witnesses besides *God*, if he say truth." Moreover we find in the Jewish Scriptures, that in speaking of a third party both the second and the third personal pronouns are sometimes used. Hosea, ii. 15—17: "And I will give her her vineyards from thence, and the valley of Achor for a door of hope; and she shall sing

* Compiled by the Rev. Solomon Hirschell, translated by Messrs. Justins, Barnet, and Joseph, and printed in London by E. Justins, 1803.

there, as in the days of her youth, and as in the day when she came up out of the land of Egypt." "And it shall be at that day, saith the Lord, *that* thou shalt call me Ishi; and shalt call me no more Baalim." "For I will take away the names of Baalim out of her mouth, and they shall no more be remembered by their name." Ver. 19: "And I will betroth thee unto me for ever; yea, I will betroth thee unto me in righteousness, and in judgment, and in loving-kindness, and in mercies." The public may now judge what weight the argument of the Editor ought to carry with it, and whether I adduced only a "Jewish dream" in applying verse 18 originally to Moses, or whether the Editor rather has not founded his position on the ground of mere imagination. To me, as an Asiatic, nothing can appear more strange than an attempt to deduce the deity of Jesus from an address by David to the omnipresent God, couched in both the second and third persons. I will, moreover, confidently appeal to the context, to satisfy any unprejudiced person that the Psalmist, in verse 18th, had Moses alone in view. The Psalm, it will be recollected, was written on the specific occasion of the removal of the ark, which was done according to the instructions delivered to Moses by God on Mount Sinai. David accordingly recapitulates in the preceding verses of the Psalm, the wonderful mercies of God in delivering Israel from the Egyptians, and leading them towards the promised land. In verses 15—17, Sinai is thus mentioned: "The hill of God is as the hill of Bashan; an high hill, as the hill of Bashan. Why leap ye, ye high hills? This is the hill which God desireth to dwell in; yea, the Lord will dwell in it for ever. The chariots of God are twenty thousand, even thousands of angels: the Lord is among them, as in Sinai, in the holy place." In verse 18, immediately after mention of the word Sinai, the holy place, he goes on, "Thou hast ascended on high, thou hast led captivity captive: thou hast *received gifts* for men; yea, for the rebellious also, *that the Lord God might dwell among them*;"—the very reason to which, in the book of Exodus, the construction of the ark, whose removal was taking place, is assigned. From this it appears evident, that the gifts alluded to were those granted on Mount Sinai; and the only question that remains is, Who was it that received those gifts for men? I leave this to be answered by the candid reader. There are, besides, many other passages in the writings of the Psalmist, where David, after addressing the Supreme Father of the universe, abruptly addresses himself to creatures, such as in Psalms

lxviii. 28; iv. 1, 2; ix. 5, 6, 10, 11; lxvi. 15, 16; xci. 13, 14. There is nothing, therefore, unusual or strange in applying the verse in question, though originally relating to Moses, in an accommodated sense to Jesus.

To prove the figurative application of the term God to Jesus, and to other superior creatures, from the authority of the Saviour himself, I quoted (Second Appeal, p. 138) John, x. 34, "Is it not written in your law, I said, Ye are Gods?" With a view to invalidate this argument, the Editor puts three questions (p. 564). The first is, "What creatures of a superior nature are here termed Gods? Those that die like men." To this I answer, Yes; the term "God" is here applied to those chiefs of Israel who were men, and who consequently died like men; and from the very circumstance of their having had the appearance of man, and having been endowed with human feelings, as well as their having been, like men, liable to death, we are under the necessity of inferring that the application of the term "God" to them is figurative, and that it is by no means real, though we find them exalted by the terms, "the sons of the Most High" (Psalm lxxxii 6*); "the first-born of God" (Exodus iv. 22); the "peculiar people of God, above all nations" (xix. 5) the "kingdom of priests, an holy nation (ver. 6); and even by the most glorifying title of "Gods" (Psalm. lxxxii. 6). Upon the same ground and the same principle, we must consider (if not biassed by prejudice) the use of the word "God," and "the Son of God," for Jesus, to be figurative, as he himself explained (John, x. 34) for although Jesus was honoured with abundantly high titles, yet he was in the appearance of man, and possessed of human feelings, and liable to death, like those chiefs of Israel, as is evident from the following, as well as many other facts recorded in the Scriptures: "She brought forth her first-born son" (Jesus). Luke ii. 7.) "And when *eight days* were accomplished for *circumcising* of the *child*, his name was called Jesus." (Ver. 21.) "And the child *grew*, and waxed *strong* in spirit, filled with wisdom, and *the grace of God upon him*." (Ver. 40.) "When he was *two years old*.") Ver. 42.) "And was subject unto them" (his parents.) (Ver. 51) "Jesus increased in wisdom and *stature*." (Ver. 52.) "The Son of Man came *eating* and *drinking*," &c. (Matt. xi. 19.) "And when he looked round about on them with

* In the original hebrew, the word בָּנִי, signifying sons, is found instead of יְלָדִי or children, as found in the English version.

anger, being *grieved*." (Mark iii. 5.) "Jesus, therefore, being *weary* with his journey" (John iv. 6.) "Now is my *soul troubled*." (xii. 27.) "And began to wash his disciples' feet." (xiii. 5.) "He was *troubled in spirit*." (Ver. 21.) "And being in an *agony*, he *prayed more earnestly*." (Luke xxii, 44.) "And (Jesus) saith unto them, *My soul is* exceedingly *sorrowful, unto death*." (Mark xiv. 34.) "Jesus, when he had *cried again* with a loud voice, *yielded up the ghost*." (Matt. xxvii. 50) "And became *obedient unto death*, even the death of the cross." (Philip. ii. 8.) Ought not the consideration of the foregoing circumstances relating to Jesus Christ, to have prevented the Editor from inquiring, "What creatures of a superior nature are here termed Gods? Those (Israelites) that die like men?" For if the circumstance of being men, and dying like men, must preclude the chiefs of Israel from being supposed to be creatures of a superior nature, notwithstanding they are called *Gods*, the highest of all the honorary terms with which any being can be exalted; how can the same argument fail of proving the common humanity of Jesus, who was, like them, in the shape of a man, and died as a man? If the Editor say, that Jesus, though he died like man, yet was raised again from the dead, I shall remind him, that Enoch, one of the sons of men, and Elijah, a Jewish prophet, never tasted death at all, like other men;* that the dead, who happened to touch the body of Elisha, revived and stood up;† and, that a dead boy was also raised by him:‡ and then ask the Editor, are not these circumstances more wonderful than Christ's being raised after death? Is not the fact of Elijah's not having died at all, more conclusive evidence of a superior nature, according to the mode of reasoning employed by the Editor, than the resurrection of Christ after his death on the cross?

In case the Editor should have recourse to the generally-adopted argument, that Jesus was possessed of a two-fold nature, the nature of God and the nature of man; the former, because he is termed God in scripture, and the latter, because he was in the shape of man; I would ask, is there any authority in the sacred writings for alleging that Jesus was possessed of such two-fold nature?—a question which, indeed, I took upon myself to put to the Editor in the Second Appeal, (p. 211,) but which he has avoided to answer. Are not Moses and the chiefs of Israel termed, in like manner, Gods,§ as well as men?||

*2 Kings ii. 11. † 2 Kings xiii. 21. ‡ 2 Kings iv. 34, 35. § Exod., vii. 1. || Deut., xxxiii. 1; Ezek., xxxiv. 31

Did not they perform wonderful miracles, as raising the dead and commanding wind and water, * as well as the sun and moon? † Did not some of them talk of themselves in a manner suitable to the nature of God alone? ‡ Are we, from these circumstances, to represent them as possessing a two-fold nature, divine and human? If not, let us give up such an unscriptural and irrational idea, as attributing to Jesus, or to any human being, a double nature of God and man, and restrain ourselves from bringing Christianity to a level with the doctrines of heathenish polytheism. Is it not a general rule, adopted to preserve concordance between all the passages of scripture, and to render them consistent with reason, that when terms, phrases, or circumstances, which are applicable to God alone, are found ascribed to a created being, either man or angel, these are to be interpreted in an inferior sense? Were we to deviate from this general rule and take these terms to be real, Judaism and Christianity would be but systems of Polytheism, and unworthy of adoption by rational beings. Such an attempt as to shew that Moses and the chiefs of Israel having been types and shadows of Jesus, are called gods, is totally inadmissible; for we find no authority in the Scriptures for such an assertion: moreover, had there been any authority declaring Moses and others to have been types of Jesus, it could not depreciate the honour which scripture confers upon them, by the application of the terms "gods" and "sons of God" to them, any more than the fact, that Christ was the Saviour of mankind, in consequence of his having been of the seed of Abraham§ and house of David, as well as the rod of the stem of Jesse,‖ could lower the dignity of the Messiah, or could exalt the rank of Abraham, or of David, above Christ.

Such an apology as ascribes birth, growth, and death, to the material body of Christ, and immortality and divinity to his spirit, is equally applicable to those Israelites that are termed gods.

The second question of the Editor is, "To whose nature is their's (Israel's) superior? only to that of the brutes!" In answer to which I refer the Editor to the passages already cited, to wit, Psalm, lxxxii. 6, Exod., iv. 22, xix. 5, 6, as well as to Exod., xxv. 8, "God was dwelling among them;" Deut. vii. 6, "That he has chosen them from all the nations," x. 15, "He loved them, he chose them only;" xiv. 1,

* I Kings, xvii. 1, xviii. 44, 45; and 2 Kings, ii. 22. † Joshua, x. 12, 13. ‡ Deut., xxvii. 1., xxxii., 1. § Genesis, xxii. 18. ‖ Isaiah, xi. 1.

"They are the sons of God;" and to numerous passages of a similar description, whence the Editor may judge whether Israel was superior to the brutes only, or to the rest of mankind. The third question is, "If other gods die like men, must Jehovah, who made heaven and earth, whose throne is forever?" My answer must be in the negative, because Jehovah is not a man-god that shall die; but he, as the God of all gods, and the Lord of lords must regulate the death and birth of those who are figuratively called gods, while he himself is immutable. Deut., x. 17: "Jehovah your God is God of gods, and Lord of lords." John, xx. 17: "To my God and your God." Psalm, xlv. 7: "God, thy God, hath anointed thee."—Let us now again refer to the context of John, x. 34. In ver. 33, the Jews assign it as the reason for their attempting to stone Jesus, that he made himself equal to God, by* calling himself the Son of God, as they supposed, in a real sense, which was, according to their law, blasphemy: Jesus, therefore, pointed out to them, in ver. 34, that even the term "god" is found figuratively applied to the chiefs of Israel, in scripture, without meaning to imply thereby, their equality with God; in ver. 35, he reminds them of their applying, according to the Scriptures, the same divine term to those chiefs; and lastly, he shews their inconsistency in calling their chiefs gods, and, at the same time, rejecting Christ's declaration of his being the son of God, in the same metaphorical sense, as being "sanctified" and "sent" by God. Is not this argument, used by Jesus, an evident disavowal of his own deity, and manifestation of his having called himself "the Son of God," only in a metaphorical sense? I am sorry to observe, that the Editor seems to have bestowed little or no reflection upon these texts.

In answer to my observation on the attempt of orthodox Christians to prove the deity of Jesus from 1 Cor., x. 9, "Neither let us tempt Christ as some of them also tempted," the Editor quotes first, an observation of my own, to wit, "How far cannot prejudice carry away men of sense! Are we not all, in common with Jesus, liable to be tempted both by men and Satan? Can the liabilty to temptation, common to God, to Jesus, to Abraham, and all mankind, be of any avail to prove the divinity and unity of those respective subjects of temptation?" He then declares, that I was not correct in the statement of my opponent's doctrine on this subject, and denies any one's, "having

* As is evident from the reply of Jesus, (ver. 36,) "Thou blasphemest; because I said I am the Son of God."

attempted to prove the deity of Christ merely from his being tempted." To shew the accuracy of my statement, however, I beg to refer the Editor to Mr. Jones's work on the nature of Christ. The Editor lastly asserts, that "it is the apostle's declaring that Christ was he who was tempted in the wilderness, and hence, the Most High God, described by the Psalmist as tempted, which is here adduced." But I do not find in the verse in question, nor in any preceding or following verse, "the apostle's declaring that Christ was he who was tempted *by Israel* in the wilderness." If the Editor has met with such a declaration elsewhere, he should first point it out, and then build his argument upon it. But unless he first shew, that being tempted by the devil, and being tempted by Israel, mean the same thing, I cannot admit any relation between the declaration of the apostles and that of the Psalmist.

Relative to Psalm cx. 1, "The Lord said unto my Lord, sit thou at my right hand, till I make thine enemies thy footstool," I observed, in my Second Appeal, (p. 223,) that "this passage is simply applied to the Messiah, manifesting, that the victory gained by him over his enemies, was entirely owing to the influence of God!" To this the Editor replies, "After the Son had humbled himself, so as to assume our nature and be appointed to the combat, it was not to be expected that the Father would *forsake him*. But that Jesus had no might of his own which our author would fain prove, is not a fact." Is it not most strange, that the Son whom the Editor considers the *immutable, almighty* God should be supposed by him again to have *humbled* himself, and to have been *appointed* by another to a combat, in which that other assisted him to obtain success? Are not these two ideas quite incompatible with each other? If such positive disavowal of his *own* power, by Jesus himself, as "I can of mine own self, do nothing," "All that the Father giveth shall come to me," has failed to convince the Editor that Jesus had no power of *his own*, no argument of mine, or of any other human being, can be expected to make an impression upon him.

The Editor afterwards endeavours to prove the omnipotence of Jesus by quoting Isaiah, lxiii. 5: "Mine own arm brought salvation unto me," and Rev., i. 8: "I am Alpha and Omega; the beginning and the end, saith the Lord, which is, and which was, and which is to come, the Almighty." Supposing these two last-mentioned passages to be actually ascribed to Jesus, conveying a manifestation of his own omnipotence, would they not be esteemed as directly contra-

dictory to his positive disavowal of omnipotence, found in the foregoing, and in hundreds of other passages? How then, are we to reconcile to our understanding the idea that the Author of true religion disavows his almighty power on one occasion, and asserts it on another? But, in fact, we are not reduced by the texts in question to any such dilemma; for the passage quoted from Isaiah (lxiii. 5) has no more allusion to Jesus than to Moses or Joshua. Whence, and under what plea, the Editor and others apply this passage to Christ, I am quite at a loss to know. The prophet here speaks of the destruction of Edom and Bozrah, under the wrath of God, for their infidelity towards Israel. These places were inhabited by the sons of Esau, (the brother of Jacob,) who was also called Edom. Gen., xxv. 30: "And Esau said to Jacob, Feed me, I pray thee, with the same red pottage, for I am faint: therefore was his name called Edom." So Jeremiah prophesies the destruction of Edom and Bozrah (xlix. 7, 8): "Concerning Edom, thus saith the Lord of hosts; Is wisdom no more in Teman? Is counsel perished from the prudent? Is their wisdom vanished? Flee ye, turn back, dwell deep, O inhabitants of Dedan; for I will bring the calamity of Esau upon him, the time that I will visit him." Ver 13: "For I have sworn by myself, saith the Lord, that Bozrah shall become a desolation, a reproach, a waste, and a curse; and all the cities thereof shall be perpetual wastes." And also the whole of Obadiah's prophecy foretells the slaughter of Edom by the wrath of God. I quote here only one or two verses (8, 9): "Shall I not in that day, saith the Lord, even destroy the wise men out of Edom, and understanding out of the mount of Esau? And thy mighty men, O Teman, shall be dismayed, to the end that every one of the mount of Esau may be cut off by slaughter." Ver. 11: "In the day that thou stoodest on the other side; in the day that the strangers carried away captive his forces, and foreigners entered into his gate, and cast lots upon Jerusalem, even thou wast as one of them." What expression does Isaiah make use of in chap. lxiii., that the passage can be interpreted as speaking the language of Jesus? Nothing of the kind that I can perceive. It contains rather such denunciations as are considered totally inconsistent with the office and character of the meek and lowly Jesus, the messenger of peace on earth, and good-will in heaven towards men. Can the following expressions, "I will tread them in my anger," "Their blood shall be upon my garment," (ver. 3, be ascribed to Jesus, who so far from treading down the inhabitants of

Edom and Bozrah, or of any other land, and sprinkling their blood upon his garment, came to reconcile them to God, and laboured in behalf of them, and of all men; even suffering his own blood to be shed, rather than refrain from teaching them the way of salvation? What particular connexion had Jesus with the destruction of the Sons of the children of Edom, to justify the Editor in referring chap. lxiii. to the Messiah? I should expect to find such language as is used by Isaiah in that chapter referring to God; for in the poetical language of the prophets, similar expressions are abundantly ascribed to the Most High in an allegorical sense. Isaiah, lix, 15—17: "And the Lord saw it, and it displeased him that there was no judgment. And he saw that there was *no man*, and wondered that there was no *intercessor*: therefore his arm *brought salvation unto him*, and his righteousness it sustained him. For he put on righteousness as a breast-plate, and an helmet of salvation upon his head; and he put on the *garments of vengeance* for clothing, and was clad with zeal as a cloak." Dan., vii. 9: "I beheld till the thrones were cast down, and the Ancient of days did sit, whose garment was white as snow."

As to Rev., i. 8, let us refer to the contexts, commencing with verse 4. In this, John, addressing the seven churches of Asia, says, "Grace be unto you, and peace from him which is, and which was, and which is to come; *and* from the seven spirits which are before his throne; *and* from Jesus Christ." He proceeds to describe Christ as a "faithful witness, the first-begotten of the dead, and the Prince of the kings of the earth," adding, "Unto him that loved us, and washed us from our sins in his own blood, and hath made us kings and priests unto God and his Father; to him be glory and dominion for ever and ever. Amen. Behold, he cometh with clouds, and every eye shall see him, and they also which pierced him: and all kindreds of the earth shall wail because of him. Even so. Amen." Having thus stated what Christ had done, and is to do, John reverts to the declaration of the eternity of God with which he commenced: "I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end, saith the Lord; which is, and which was, and which is to come, the Almighty." All this appears so very plain; the eternal attributes of the Almighty, in verse 4, are so distinct from the description of the character and office of Christ in verses 5—7; the identity of the definition of God in ver. 4, with that in ver. 8, is so obvious, that I should have thought it impossible for any one not to perceive how totally unconnected verse 8 is with that

which precedes it, and how far it was from John's intention to declare the Almighty and his faithful witness, to be one. Moreover, we find the term "Almighty" in the book of Revelation mentioned seven times, besides in verse 8, and referring *always* to God; at the same time, notwithstanding the frequent mention of the Lamb or Jesus, throughout the whole book, neither the term "Almighty," nor the designation "who is, and who was, and who is to come," equivalent to the term "Jehovah," is *once* ascribed to the Lamb. Let the candid reader judge for himself.

The Editor again introduces the subject of the angel of Bokim, (p. 565,) quoting Psalm, lxxviii. 13, "He divided the sea, and caused them to pass through, and made the waters to stand in a heap," &c. Whence he concludes that the Son was with Israel in the wilderness as their God. But what allusion this Psalm has to Christ, situated either in the wilderness, or in an inhabited land, my limited understanding is unable to discover. As I have already noticed the argument adduced by the Editor respecting angels, in the beginning of this chapter, I will not renew the subject but beg my reader's attention to that part of my treatise.

The Editor quotes Psalm, xcv. 6, 7, "For Jehovah is a great God, and a great King above all gods. O come, let us worship and bow down, let us kneel before Jehovah our Maker; for he is our God, and we are the people of his pasture, and the sheep of his hand;" and justifies the application of this passage to Jesus, upon the ground that, in John, i. 3, Jesus is declared equally with the Father to be the Maker of all things. I wonder at the Editor's choosing this passage as being applicable to Jesus, on such a basis; for should this reason be admitted as well-founded, all the passages of the Old Testament, in which Jehovah is mentioned, would be interpreted as referring to Jesus without selection. As I noticed this verse of John, i. 3, and one of two similar verses in p. 82, I will not recur to them here.

Having also noticed Psalm ii. 12, (Pages 77, 78,) "Blessed are all they who trust in him," I will abstain from reiterating the same subject, though I find the Editor repeating his arguments here in his usual manner.

To my great surprise I observe that the Editor again quotes John, x. 30, "I and my Father are one," to shew that God and Jesus, though they are two beings, yet are one, without any attention to all the illustrations I adduced to explain this passage in the Second

Appeal (pp. 132, 133.) I will, however, elucidate this passage still more fully in its proper place. I thank the Rev. Editor for quoting such passages as Psalm, lxxxi. 9, 10, and lxxxiii. 18, which, in common with all other authorities of the sacred books, decidedly prove the unity of the Supreme Being, and that no other being, except him, is worthy to be called Jehovah.

In the course of the quotation from the Psalms, the Editor cites Heb., iii. 3, 4: "For this man was counted worthy of more glory than Moses, inasmuch as he who hath builded the house is worthy of more honor than the house. For every house is built by some man; but he who built all things is God." Upon which he comments, that it was Christ that built the house understood, (as he supposes,) from the phrase "all things" in the verse in question. I will not prolong the discussion by pointing out the errors appearing in the English version. I only repeat verse 6, explaining what the apostle meant by the house of Christ, which the Editor omitted to mention; to wit, "But Christ as a *son over his own house, whose house are we.*" Hence it is evident, that the house which Christ built by the will of the Father is the Christian church; and that God, the Father of Jesus, and of the rest of the universe, is the author of all things whatsoever.